



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



## Harvard College Library



FROM THE

### BRIGHT LEGACY

One half the income from this Legacy, which was received in 1880 under the will of

JONATHAN BROWN BRIGHT  
of Waltham, Massachusetts, is to be expended for books for the College Library. The other half of the income is devoted to scholarships in Harvard University for the benefit of descendants of

HENRY BRIGHT, JR.,  
who died at Watertown, Massachusetts, in 1686. In the absence of such descendants, other persons are eligible to the scholarships. The will requires that this announcement shall be made in every book added to the Library under its provisions.





Any Newsdealer or Bookseller.

Vol. 1., No. 7.

DEVOTED TO NATIONAL LITERATURE

A. B. RE FORD PROP. 17 BARCLAY ST. N.Y.

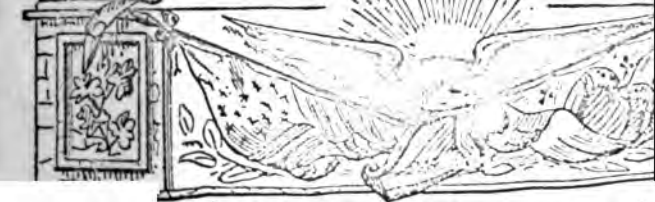
THE  
IRISH RACE  
IN  
AMERICA.

BY

Capt. ED. O'MEAGHER CONDO

PRICE 25 CENTS.

BRIAN  
O'CONNELL  
MEAGHER  
GRATTAN  
WOLFETONE  
STEWART  
MOORE  
JACKSON  
O'DONNELL  
WAYNE  
SULLIVAN  
SHEILDS  
CLINTON



the New York Post Office for transmission through the mail



BRIGHT FUND

HARVARD UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY

JUL 07 2006





1. The first part of the document is a list of names and titles, including the names of the authors and the titles of the works. The list is organized in a table-like format with columns for the author's name, the title of the work, and the year of publication. The names are written in a serif font, and the titles are in a smaller, all-caps font. The years are written in a smaller, all-caps font. The list is organized in a table-like format with columns for the author's name, the title of the work, and the year of publication.

Any Newsdealer or Bookseller.

Vol. 1., No. 7.

W 10623. 1572  
Price, 25 Cents.

FORD'S NATIONAL LIBRARY

DEVOTED TO NATIONAL LITERATURE

A. & R. FORD PROP. 17 BARCLAY STREET NEW YORK

THE  
IRISH RACE

IN  
AMERICA.

BY  
Capt. ED. O'MEAGHER CONDON.

PRICE, 25 CENTS.



Entered at the New York Post Office for transmission through the mail as second-class matter.

"THE SWORN BROTHERS;"  
FAMED FONTENOY.

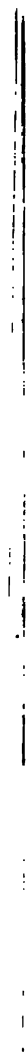
Charles O'CALLAGHAN'S dramatic work  
Historical description of the great  
battle, and other Irish legends  
by the poet played at it by  
the Irish Brigade.

A FAMED FONTENOY NUMBER

PRICE, 25 CENTS.

A. & R. FORD, PROPRIETORS

17 BARCLAY STREET, NEW YORK.



←=====No. 8.=====→

IN PRESS.

Will contain DENNIS O'SULLIVAN'S  
thrilling story of Irish valor,

ENTITLED:

**"THE SWORN BROTHERS;"**  
OR,  
**FAMED FONTENOY.**

Besides O'CALLAGHAN'S dramatic and •  
historical description of the great  
battle, and other facts relating  
to the part played in it by  
the Irish Brigade.

**A SPLENDID FONTENOY NUMBER.**

Order it in advance of your Newsdealer.

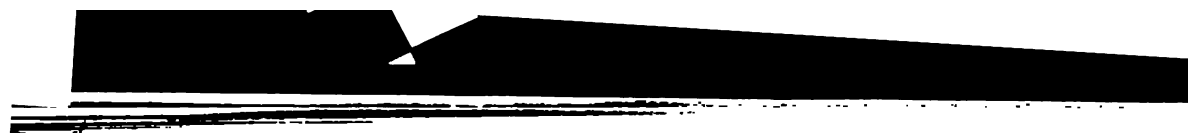
**PRICE, - - 25 CENTS.**

**A. E. & R. E. FORD, Publishers,**

**17 BARCLAY STREET, NEW YORK.**







6

THE

# IRISH RACE

IN

# AMERICA

BY

EDWARD O'MEAGHER CONDON.

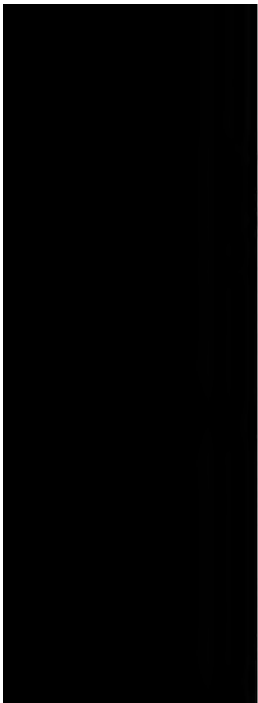
---

NEW YORK:

FORDS' NATIONAL LIBRARY

17 BARCLAY STREET,

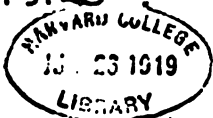
1887.



HARVARD UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY

JUL 07 2006

US 10623.15.20

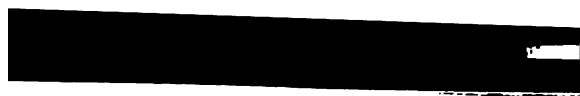


COPYRIGHT, 1887.  
A. E. & R. E. FORD.

HARVARD UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY

APR 09 1984

TO  
PATRICK FORD,  
AS A SLIGHT MARK OF PERSONAL REGARD  
AND  
OF APPRECIATION FOR HIS EMINENT SERVICES TO  
THE IRISH RACE THIS LITTLE VOLUME  
IS DEDICATED BY  
THE AUTHOR



## CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
CHAPTER I.	
America discovered by Irishmen—Columbus and his followers, . . . . .	1
CHAPTER II.	
The "Anglo-Saxon" Theory, . . . . .	9
CHAPTER III.	
The Irish in Maryland, . . . . .	15
CHAPTER IV.	
The Irish in Pennsylvania, . . . . .	26
CHAPTER V.	
The Irish in New England, New York, and New Jersey, . . . . .	36
CHAPTER VI.	
The Irish in the South, . . . . .	57
CHAPTER VII.	
Immense Irish immigration just before the Revolution —Multitudes of evicted Tenants come over and fight for American Liberty, . . . . .	68
CHAPTER VIII.	
British Despotism arouses American Resistance— "Sons of Liberty," . . . . .	77
CHAPTER IX.	
Ireland's Sympathy with America, . . . . .	
CHAPTER X.	
The first Act of War—Sullivan's Capture of Fort William and Mary—Lexington and Concord—First American Naval Victory—O'Brien at Machias	





Siege of Boston, Quebec—Embassy to Canada, . . . . .	117
CHAPTER XII.	
Irish-American Signers of the Declaration of Independence, . . . . .	141
CHAPTER XIII.	
The Irish in the War of Independence, . . . . .	170
CHAPTER XIV.	
The Irish in the War of Independence, continued, . . . . .	200
CHAPTER XV.	
Irishmen in the Navy during the Revolution—O'Brien, Barry, . . . . .	221
CHAPTER XVI.	
Half the Continental Army composed of Irish-Americans—25,000 Anglo-Americans armed against their Countrymen—Washington and his Irish friends, . . . . .	229
CHAPTER XVII.	
The See of Baltimore established—Alien and Sedition Laws—Irish Patriot Exiles, . . . . .	254
CHAPTER XVIII.	
The Irish in the War of 1812—1815, . . . . .	268
CHAPTER XIX.	
American Sympathy with Ireland—Jackson, Polk— The Mexican War, . . . . .	287
CHAPTER XX.	
Irish Famine—The Exodus—The War for the Union, . . . . .	300
CHAPTER XXI.	
of the Irish Element in the United States, and South America, . . . . .	308

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA

### CHAPTER I.

#### AMERICA DISCOVERED BY IRISHMEN.—COLUMBUS AND LOWERS.

THE history of the Irish race in America is one of those in whose veins its blood runs may read with pleasure. It is, in the main, a record of privations, with manly fortitude, of difficulties overcome by indomitable determination, of unselfish patriotism often displayed under the most unfavorable circumstances, of unremitting effort, too seldom successful in obtaining its just reward, of unswerving fidelity and devotion to the cause of a just and persistent attachment to the principles to which the successful assertion and maintenance of this Republic owe not only its origin but its glory, progress and prosperity. The desire on the part of Irish Americans to preserve the memory of the share taken by men of their blood, in establishing and building up this nation, is not an unworthy, but a laudable and patriotic one, and in order to gratify to some extent, the following brief outline of the principal facts of American history, in which they may feel a special interest, has been prepared.

From the earliest ages, the Irish have been remarkable for their love of adventure and travel. Their Phœnician ancestors swept westward in their galleys, along the Mediterranean to Spain, and past the pillars of Hercules,



111

THE OFFICIALS  
OF THE  
OFFICE OF THE  
ATTORNEY GENERAL  
OF THE  
STATE OF  
NEW YORK  
IN SENATE  
JANUARY 10, 1901

them, disdaining the slow mode of progress by land, the children of Milesius ere long sailed across the sea, to seek the Isle of Destiny, the western limit of the Old World, and the nearest land to this great, but then unknown, continent, whereon in God's good time was to be established the mightiest Republic upon earth, and where millions of their race were to find a home and freedom. For many centuries after the settlement of the Gaelic tribes in Ireland, the spirit of enterprise of the people found vent in commercial intercourse with the ports of southern Europe and the Mediterranean. At a later period, they became indignant at the near approach of the Roman eagles to their shores, and often their fleets swept down on the coasts of Britain and Gaul, in defiance of those who claimed to be masters of the world. But when St. Patrick had declared to them the divine truths of the Christian faith, and they had embraced it with a fervor and a fidelity never to be chilled or shaken, their thoughts took a new direction. They devoted themselves to the duties of religion and the advancement of learning, with quenchless zeal and tireless industry. Not satisfied with welcoming to their monasteries and schools countless strangers from every land—who received gratuitously, not only education, but shelter, food and clothing—large numbers of Irish monks went abroad, through France, Germany, Switzerland and Italy, as well as Britain, and throughout the whole extent of Europe their voices were heard proclaiming the dread mystery of man's Redemption, bringing the erring to penance, enlightening the ignorant, and building churches and monasteries for the glory and service of God, and schools for the diffusion of knowledge. With them it was declared "the habit of travelling had become a second nature."\* "What shall I say of Ireland,"

\* Walafrid Strabo, Vita S. Galli.

asks a writer of the period, "which, despising the dangers of the ocean, emigrates entirely with her troops of philosophers and descends on our shores"?\*

But the Irish missionaries did not confine their attention entirely to Britain and the Continent. They founded colonies and planted the Christian faith in Iceland and, before all others, crossed the Atlantic and trod the shores of America. Records still in existence show that when the Northmen landed in Iceland in the ninth century, they found already there settlements of Irish Christians. The latter, however, some time after withdrew from that island, leaving behind them books in their own language, bells and croziers, distinct indications of their origin and their faith, as well as of the presence among them of bishops and priests.

Owing to the wanton destruction of large numbers of ancient Irish archives by the English, our knowledge of the first discovery of America is not as exact as could be desired, but quite enough is known to justify us in claiming the honor of that achievement for St. Brendan, bishop of Clonfert, who flourished in the sixth century. According to the Irish annals this prelate, after investigating the traditions which even in his time were prevalent in Ireland respecting the existence of a great continent to the West, resolved to seek it out, and convert its people to the faith of Christ. Having made all necessary preparations, he set sail with some faithful companions, in 545, from the bay on the coast of Kerry which still bears his name, and after a difficult voyage landed, as is generally believed, upon the shores of Virginia. He then penetrated inland until he came to a large river flowing from east to west, supposed to be the Ohio. After having preached the Gospel for seven years, in various parts of the country, he returned to Ireland, and

\* Heiric, Pref. Vita S. Germani.

[REDACTED]

according to some authorities, remained there and founded several monasteries, but others assert that having obtained a reinforcement for his missionary company, he again set sail for the West, and was never heard of more. The latter statement appears the more probable, from the fact that we find no mention of a bishop filling the see of Ardfert, over which he presided at the time of his departure, until the middle of the eleventh century.

The story of St. Brendan's voyage and discoveries was soon made known in every part of Europe. There are still to be found in the libraries of Paris, several manuscripts containing accounts of it in Latin, and throughout France in various places, are preserved similar narrations in the Romance and old French dialects, while versions in Irish, German, Spanish, Portuguese and Italian are scattered in all parts of the continent. Wynkyn de Worde, the first English printer, published nine years before Columbus sailed from Palos, a relation of the Irish saint's voyage\* and adventures, but owing to the want of accurate information, his story was embellished with numerous imaginary incidents. In the *Nova Legenda* written by Capgrave, or as some believe by John of Tynemouth, and published in 1516, another sketch of St. Brendan's discoveries is given. Voringius, Provincial of the Dominicans, and bishop of Genoa, in the latter part of the thirteenth century, speaks particularly of "St. Brandan's Land" in his *Golden Legend*, and Paulo Toscanelli the Florentine, who prepared for Columbus the charts used on his first voyage, gave this name to the territory which, in accordance with the custom of the Italian geographers of that period, he marked down as being opposite to "Europe and Africa from the south of Ireland to the end of Guinea." Otway, in a work published in Dublin, in

\* "Lyfe of Saynt Brandan," in the *Golden Legend*. Published by Wynkyn de Worde, 1483. Fol. 357.

1845, gives an interesting account of the traditions preserved among the people of the west of Ireland respecting St. Brendan's voyage.\*

---

\* In a note to "Otway's sketches in Erris and Tyrawley," the following appears: "We are informed that Brendan, hearing of the previous voyage of his cousin, Barinthus, in the western ocean, and obtaining an account from him of the happy isles he had landed on in the far west, determined, under the strong desire of winning heathen souls to Christ, to undertake a voyage of discovery himself. And aware that, all along the western coast of Ireland, there were many traditions respecting the existence of a western land, he proceeded to the islands of Arran, and there remained for some time, holding communication with venerable St. Enda, and obtaining from him much information on what his mind was bent. There can be little doubt that he proceeded northward along the coast of Mayo, and made inquiry, among its bays and islands, of the remnants of the Tuatha Danaan people, that once were so expert in naval affairs, and who acquired from the Milesians, or Scots, that overcame them, the character of being magicians, for their superior knowledge. At Inniskea, then, and Innisgloria, Brendan set up his cross; and, in after times, in his honor were erected those curious remains that still exist. Having prosecuted his inquiries with all diligence, Brendan returned to his native Kerry; and from a bay sheltered by the lofty mountain that is now known by his name, he set sail for the Atlantic land; and, directing his course towards the southwest, in order to meet the summer solstice, or what we would call the tropic, after a long and rough voyage, his little bark being well provisioned, he came to summer seas, where he was carried along, without the aid of sail or oar, for many a long day. This, it is to be presumed, was the great gulf-stream, and which brought his vessel to shore somewhere about the Virginian capes, or where the American coast tends eastward, and forms the New England States. Here landing, he and his companions marched steadily into the interior for fifteen days, and then came to a large river, flowing from east to west; this, evidently, was the river Ohio. And this the holy adventurer was about to cross, when he was accosted by a person of noble presence,—but whether a real or visionary man does not appear,—who told him that he had gone far enough; that further discoveries were reserved for other men, who would, in due time, come and Christianize all that pleasant land. The above, when tested



America was known to the Scandinavians as *Irland it Mikla*, or "Great Ireland." Their records contain accounts of three voyages made thither, after the time of St. Brendan, and before the advent of Columbus. The *Landnamabock*, compiled in the thirteenth century, tells us that in 983 Ari Marson, a kinsman of Eric the Red, "was driven by a tempest to *Huitramannaland* or 'White Man's Land,' which some call *Irland it Mikla*, and which lies in the western ocean near to Vinland the Good, west from Ireland." Ari, it is said, on the authority of Thorfinn, Jarl of the Orkneys, was not permitted to return home, but was still held in great honor, by those who insisted on his remaining among them, and received the sacrament of baptism while living there, from which last fact we may perceive, that the seed sown by St. Brendan, had, up to that time at least, borne fruit. Another adventurer, Biorn, crossed the Atlantic, some time after Ari Marson's voyage, and, toward the middle of the eleventh century; he was followed by Gudlief, son of Gudlang, according to the statements found in the book above mentioned, which were based on the testimony of Rafn, a merchant of Limerick.

In the Scandinavian Sagas, "Great Ireland" is described in the following manner. "To the south of habitable Greenland there are uninhabited and wild tracts and enormous icebergs. The country of the Skrælings lies beyond these; Markland beyond this, and Vinland the Good beyond the last. Next to this and something beyond it lies Albania,

by common sense, clearly shows that Brendan landed on a continent, and went a good way into the interior, met a great river running in a different direction from those he heretofore crossed; and here, from the difficulty of transit, or want of provisions, or deterred by increasing difficulties, he turned back; and, no doubt, in a dream, he saw some such vision which embodied his own previous thought and satisfied him that it was expedient for him to return home."

that is *Huitramannaland*, whither formerly vessels came from Ireland. There, several Irishmen and Icelanders saw and recognized Ari (Marson), concerning whom nothing had been heard for a long time and who had been made their chief by the inhabitants of the land."

Eminent writers believe that "the country of the Skrælings" here referred to, was the Esquimaux coast, that "Markland" was what is known to us as Labrador, that "Vinland" included what is now New England, and that "Huitramannaland", or as it was usually called, "Great Ireland" extended from the last named territory to Florida.

The Irish would doubtless have turned the discoveries of St. Brendan to good account, and established, and kept up communication with America, were it not that their attention was drawn in another direction by the savage contest carried on between the Britons and their treacherous Saxon "allies," who sought to become masters of their country, and who, it seemed not improbable, after their expected triumph, might endeavor to obtain a footing in Ireland. At a later period the long continued incursions of the Danes, and the confusion and excitement which they caused, brought about a condition of affairs extremely unfavorable for the carrying out of peaceful enterprises. From the final overthrow of the northern marauders at Clontarf, to the landing of the Normans, internal disputes similar to those which in that age disturbed the peace of almost all other countries, kept the minds of the Irish princes and people fixed upon incidents occurring on their own soil, and the consequences which followed the last named event were of such a character, as to compel thenceforth their almost exclusive and uninterrupted attention to be given to domestic affairs. So it was left for other nations to colonize permanently the "Great Ireland" across the Atlantic, though that was nevertheless

[REDACTED]



destined to become in time, the chosen home and country of the great majority of the Irish race.

Nearly nine hundred and fifty years after St. Brandan's voyage, Columbus sailed from Palos on his mission of discovery. The constant intercourse maintained between Ireland and Spain from the earliest ages, gives good ground for believing the statements made, with respect to the presence of Irishmen amongst his crews. An old Italian writer asserts, that one of these was the first to plant his foot upon the soil of St. Salvador, having presumed to leap ashore, even before the illustrious Admiral himself. However this may be, it is certain that among the forty men left by Columbus to guard the fort which he built on the island of St. Domingo, previous to his return to Spain from his first trans-Atlantic voyage, there was a native of Galway named William Eyres. The latter, of course shared the fate of his companions, who were all slain and the fort destroyed by the Indians, soon after the Admiral's departure. The list containing the names of the fated garrison was found by Navarrette\* among the archives of Seville, early in the present century, while searching for materials for his great history of Spanish maritime discovery.

\* "*Coleccion de los viajes y descubrimientos que hicieron por mar los Espanoles desde fines del siglo XV*," written by Martino Fernandez Navarrette; vols. 1 and 2 published in 1895.

## CHAPTER II.

### THE "ANGLO-SAXON" THEORY.

BEFORE proceeding to glance at the part, which men of Irish blood have taken in the affairs of this continent, it may be well to call attention to the absurd use of the term "Anglo-Saxon" by British and pro-British writers, and speakers, especially those among them, who are accustomed to contrast the alleged virtues of the people to whom the designation is applied, with the assumed faults and defects of the Celt or Gael. The persons referred to, assume that the "Angles" were, like the Saxons, a Germanic tribe, and that both overran nearly the whole of Britain, almost extirpating the native Celts, except a few who were driven into the mountains of Wales and Scotland; that in fact the original inhabitants were dealt with as Cromwell a thousand years later, endeavored to deal with the Irish, when he ordered the people of three provinces to cross the Shannon, and not to return under pain of death.

Those assumptions are now beginning to be recognized by the best informed students of history, as groundless. No Teutonic tribe was ever known by the name of "Angles." In the language of a distinguished writer\* who recently dis-

\* Charles Mackay, L. L. D., of London, who in a very interesting article, which appeared in the *New York Independent* of August 13, 1885, said on this subject:

"A very large proportion of the British people are accustomed to boast of their 'Anglo-Saxon' descent, without acknowledging or even suspecting that their ancestry is to a much larger extent British than Teutonic, and that they are the descendants, more or less mixed, with



cussed the question, "the German 'Angles' were an imaginary people who never existed." The much misused and misunderstood word is in fact a corruption of *An-Gael* which signifies "the Celt." Recent investigations have shown that the Celtic Britons formed a considerable portion of the

other races of the Celtic inhabitants who possessed the whole country before the Roman, German, Danish and Norman invaders set foot on the soil or usurped the Government. In all this they show their ignorance of the meaning of the words 'British,' 'English' and 'Anglo-Saxon.' The error is of old growth and originated in the pretentious half-knowledge of the early writers, who compiled their traditional, and for the most part untrustworthy histories, in the later languages. Latin was at that time the only medium of the little literature which existed. None of the Celtic languages was reduced to writing except by the Druidical priests, who kept their learning to themselves, and only communicated orally with the people. And German and its offshoot, the early English, was in its infancy and almost wholly inchoate and unformed."

"The error with which I am at present more particularly concerned is of more than a thousand years' standing, and derives the name of the Southern frontier of Great Britain from a supposed German tribe, who with the Jutes and Saxons, invaded the island after the departure of the Romans. It happens, however, that the name of "Angles" was never borne by, or known to any German tribes. The invaders of the East coast of Britain came from the opposite coast of the continent, principally from Denmark, Holland and Belgium, and brought their barbarous laws, and rude language along with them. The true origin of the word 'Angles' is the Celtic or Gaelic '*an*,' the definite article, and '*gnidheil*', (in which the consonants *dh* are not pronounced), which signifies the 'gael' or the 'Celts;' whence *An-gael*, and not Angles."

"The epithet 'Anglo-Saxon,' now so frequently applied to South Britain, is of much more recent origin, and was not known in the golden age of English literature, when Shakespeare and Spencer flourished, nor until the second half of the eighteenth century. Britain was known to the Romans as *Anglia*, centuries before the Saxons or that section of them erroneously supposed to have been called Angles, established themselves in any part of the country. It was not until the Hanoverian (a Saxon) family of the Georges had given three sovereigns to the country, that courtly writers began to talk of the 'Anglo-Saxon' origin of the

population of England, even after the Saxons became its masters through treachery; that when the Danes had, in their turn subjugated the latter, they brought over large colonies of their own people, whose descendants still predominate in northeastern England, and that finally the Norman Con-

people, and that the epithet finally became synonymous with 'English.' It is true that in the time of the Romans, a small portion of the eastern coast of *Anglia*, immediately opposite Belgium and Holland, was called 'the Saxon shore.' The name was given to it from the fact that successive swarms of Dutch and Danish pirates had succeeded in forming such settlements on the littoral, though they had never been able to penetrate into the interior of the country. The Gael, or Celts, called these pirates *Sassenach*, as the Southern English are called to this day by the Gaelic and Celtic speaking people of Wales, Ireland and Scotland. The word did not originally signify a German or native of Saxony, but a robber and an assassin, in which sense it still obtains currency among such of the Irish people as retain a hereditary hatred of British rule."

Referring to the influence which "popular usage" in England has produced on the minds of the Scotch, in regard to this question Dr. Mackay continues:

"It cannot be affirmed that the objection taken by the northern nation to the southern usurpation of the epithet English, is in any way unreasonable, founded as it is upon the commonly received if not universal opinion, that the English receive their name from the German 'Angles,' an imaginary people who never existed. The Southern English believed this fable, and not aware of the fact that they are not half so much German as they think themselves, made light of the Scottish objection, and called it sentimental, and unworthy of practical consideration. But if Angles are in reality "Angael" or the Gael, the Scottish and Northern Britain people are quite as much Angael or English as those of the south, and the English Government is rightfully the designation of government of the whole kingdom. This fact should remove the natural jealousy of the Scotch, and cut away from the conceit of the South British the very slender and rotten foundation on which it is based. But until the Southern English admit the fact that a colony of Germans did not give name to England, but that the whole country of Britain, otherwise *Anglia*, as the Romans called it, derives its name from the Celtic *Angael*, the North British are quite right in objecting to being called English."



quest was followed by an immense immigration, of the kindred of those who swept away forever Saxon supremacy and power at Hastings. Of the four principal elements, Celtic, Saxon, Danish and Norman-French, which compose the mass of the population of Britain, the first named is certainly strongest in point of numbers, but it is questionable whether the second be entitled to the next place in that respect. The descendants of the tribes who accompanied and followed, in the wake of Hengist and Horsa, form but a comparatively small minority of the British people. The application to them of the epithet "Anglo-Saxon," is absurd and misleading, as is the assumption, that they form the bulk of the nation, and the extravagant conceit, that they compose the great mass of the citizens of this republic.\* A little consideration given to this question, would lead to the removal of erroneous impressions still existing in many quarters with respect to it, and prevent in future the mischievous effects, which they have too often caused.

\* In this connection the remark made by Brodhead in his "*History of the State of New York*" may be quoted. "Much," he says, "of what has been written of American history, has been written by those who, from habit or prejudice, have been inclined to magnify the influence and extol the merit of the Anglo-Saxon race at the expense of every other element which has assisted to form the national greatness."

The following from the *American Medical Monthly*, Dec., 1855, may be added here:

"The history of emigration, and the peculiarity of our language, so different from the Saxon dialects of east and north England, prove that our ancestors came from the Celtic south and west of England, and the other persecuted Celtic parts of the three kingdoms,—not to mention Celtic Spain, Celtic France and Celtic Belgium. The Celto-Germans, from the borders of the Rhine, probably outnumbered the Gothic immigrants from North Europe, whose type has been submerged in the general Celtic tide. The true American type is therefore not a hybrid Anglo-Saxon, but a pure-bred Celtic race, as their language, their history, their physique, and impulsive versatile genius testify."

It may be further said that the number of emigrants of all elements, from England to this country previous to the Revolution, did not greatly exceed that of those who came here from Ireland, though the contrary opinion has long been prevalent. It is not difficult to account for the erroneous views entertained until recently on this subject. Through the rigid enforcement of the infamous penal "laws," the British government sought to deprive the great mass of the Irish people, of the blessings of religion and the benefits of education. Its efforts to obliterate the ancient faith from the soil of Ireland were unsuccessful, but, it to a great extent, accomplished its other object. The descendants of those who in past days had diffused knowledge throughout Britain and Europe, were deprived of the right to educate themselves, because of their fidelity to their religious convictions. The inevitable result followed. Ignorance overspread the land, except where hunted priests might find time, amid the dangers to which they were exposed, to instruct their people, or daring devotees of the forbidden art of teaching, might, at the risk of imprisonment and death, endeavor in the shade of a hedge, or under the shelter of a ruined hut, to communicate the rudiments of knowledge to those who aspired after the prohibited luxury.

The early Irish immigrants found the British penal "laws" in force here. The great scarcity of priests rendered the practice of the duties of their religion almost impossible, and its profession deprived them in almost every quarter, of the right to share in the privileges enjoyed by others. Their immediate descendants might cherish traditions of their origin and belief, but these under the circumstances by which they were surrounded, naturally grew fainter in course of time, and within a few generations, became necessarily vague, even if they were not entirely effaced. Americans of Irish and Catholic ancestry, without the means of



practising or preserving a correct knowledge of their father's faith, were gradually drawn into the ranks of the various sects, with whose members they grew up and mingled. Moreover in the books of instruction which they studied at school, and the works on history and other subjects which they read, they found England extolled above all other nations, while the Irish were represented as rude, insubordinate and ignorant. With no opportunity afforded them of obtaining truthful information on these subjects, they became to some extent impressed with a belief in the correctness of the misleading statements and views so persistently promulgated; lost pride in preserving the memory of their origin, and at length yielded a tacit assent to the assumptions of British writers; that the descendants of the countrymen of the latter, formed the great mass of the people of this continent. But it is by no means too late to correct this error, or to remove the mischievous effects to which it has led.

With regard to Irish immigrants of the various Protestant denominations who sought a home on this soil before the Revolution, it is to be remembered that they were subjected to few restrictions or disqualifications. Free from the embarrassments under which their Catholic countrymen who came here labored, they could avow more boldly their nationality, and manifest more freely and fearlessly their pride in it. As, moreover, from the circumstances alluded to, they occupied a more prominent position and took a more active part in public affairs, than their Catholic kindred here, the proportion between their numbers and those of the latter, seems much greater than that which obtained in Ireland at that time, though in reality, there was but little difference. These facts should not be lost sight of by those who wish to form a correct estimate of the strength of the Irish race in America.

## CHAPTER III.

## THE IRISH IN MARYLAND.

THE first considerable emigration from Ireland to America took place in 1629, when a colony of Irish and English effected a permanent settlement in Guiana.\* George Calvert, first Lord Baltimore, had endeavored to establish a colony of a similar character on the peninsula of Avalon, in Newfoundland, three years earlier, but owing to the rigor of the climate, he after spending over \$100,000, and passing two winters in the place, reluctantly abandoned his project and returned home.

This distinguished man was born in 1680, and at an early age obtained a position at Court, through the influence of Sir Robert Cecil, the "artful" Minister whom James I., continued in the position he had held under Elizabeth. In 1620 Calvert was made Secretary of State, and he afterwards entered the English Parliament as member, first for Yorkshire, his native county, and later for the University of Oxford. In 1624 he became a Catholic, and at once resigned his position as Secretary, saying to James, "I must now be wanting to my trust or violate my conscience in the discharge of this office." The King was "so moved by Calvert's honest avowal, that while he accepted his resignation, he continued him as a member of the Privy Council for life, and soon after created him Lord Baltimore," † his

\* Marmion's "History of the Maritime Ports of Ireland,"  
 † McSherry, "History of Maryland."





title being taken from the town of that name in southwestern Cork, anciently known as a sanctuary of the Druids.

Soon after his return from Newfoundland, Lord Baltimore went to Virginia with the intention of establishing himself there, but unfortunately, religious bigotry was at that period too strong in the province to allow him to carry out his purpose. He was urged to take the oath of supremacy, which was considered equivalent to a renunciation of his faith, and upon his refusal to comply, was compelled to go away. He then ascended the Chesapeake, and surveyed a portion of the present State of Maryland, after which he returned to England, and in a short time made application to Charles II., for a grant of that territory. Henrietta Maria, the Catholic wife of the ill-starred sovereign, supported the request, which was acceded to, but before the charter had received the royal signature, Calvert died, "leaving a name against which the breath of calumny has hardly dared whisper a reproach." \* His eldest son, Cecil, who inherited his title and privileges, obtained however the grant intended for his father and undertook to carry out his purpose. Leonard Calvert, brother of the proprietary, was placed in charge of the undertaking, and he with about two hundred Irish and English emigrants "nearly all of whom were Catholics and gentlemen of fortune and respectability, who desired to fly from the spirit of intolerance which pervaded England, and to rear up their altars in freedom in the wilderness," † set sail from the Isle of Wight in November 1633, having "first placed their ships under the protection of God, imploring the intercession of the Blessed Virgin and of St. Ignatius and all the guardian angels of Maryland." ‡ The expedition was accompanied by Fathers

\* Bancroft.

† McSherry.

‡ Father White, "*Relatio itineris in Marylandiam.*"

White and John Altham of the Society of Jesus, and was supplied by the generosity of Calvert with stores of provisions, clothing, agricultural implements, and whatever else was deemed necessary for the comfort of the intending settlers. After a weary voyage of four months, the emigrants landed on the island of St. Clements, and as became them, first sought the blessing of God upon their enterprise. "On the day of the Annunciation of the Holy Virgin Mary," says Father White, "the twenty-fifth of March, in the year 1634, we offered in this island for the first time the Sacrifice of the Mass; in this region of the world it had never been celebrated before. The sacrifice being ended, having taken upon our shoulders the great cross, which we had hewn from a tree, and going in procession to the place that had been designated, the governor, commissioners and other Catholics participating in the ceremony, we erected it as a trophy to Christ the Saviour, while the Litany of the Cross was chanted humbly, on our bended knees with great emotion of soul." \* The Governor at once bought from the Indians a tract of territory on the mainland, about thirty miles in length, which is now included in St. Mary's county, and on March 27, the city of St. Mary was founded. Speaking of this event Bancroft says that on the day mentioned, "the Catholics took quiet possession of the little place and religious liberty obtained a home, its only home in the wide world, at the humble village which bore the name of St. Mary's." †

The new colony made rapid progress. During the first two or three years after its settlement, the proprietary expended upon its improvement more than \$200,000. All who believed in Christ were cordially welcomed there, and Puritans banished from Virginia and Quakers driven out of

\* Relatio.

† Bancroft.



Page 1

New England, found a refuge and freedom upon a soil unstained by the blood of its original possessors, and among a people free from the fell spirit of religious bitterness, which then ruled supreme in the other colonies, subject to England. Nor were the Indians neglected, or looked upon, as in Massachusetts and elsewhere as "the devil's own children and agents, whom the saints were in duty bound to exterminate and send back to the powers of darkness whence they came."\* The devoted and zealous Jesuit Fathers divided their time between them and the settlers. Native tribes and communities were converted, and the "Our Father" and the "Hail Mary" were heard in the wigwam of the savage, as well as in the home of the pale-face. Hymns in honor of the Crucified, and of the Sinless Mother, who stood beneath His cross on Calvary, echoed alike through the paths of the forest and in the streets of the little town, and peace and harmony reigned, between the children of the soil and those who sought to found upon it, a refuge for the oppressed and persecuted of every clime and creed. The Jesuits applied themselves with their characteristic ardor, to the study of the Indian language and its many dialects, and soon became able to instruct the native neophytes in their own tongue. The success of the Fathers in their "spiritual plantations" was rapid and remarkable. Within five years from the time of their first landing they had baptized Chilomac, King of the Piscataways, who dwelt near where to-day stands the Capital of the Republic, with his family and a considerable number of his tribe. This example was followed by the young Queen of the Potopacos, with the wife and children of another chief, and nearly all their followers. The spirit which animated the missionaries will be understood from the words of one of their number,

Father Block, uttered in 1641, a short time before death. "For my part," he wrote, "I would rather, lying in the conversion of these Indians, expire on the ground deprived of all human succor and perishing of hunger, than once think of abandoning this holy work to God from fear of want." The good Fathers were so devoted to their sacred duties, that they declined to take part in purely secular affairs. Though summoned to the first Legislature of the colony, convened in 1635, "desired to be excused from giving voice in this Assembly"\* and though their names were retained on the list of members, they took no part in the deliberations of the body.

But ere long troubles arose which owed their formative character, to the intolerance of those who had sought shelter in Maryland, a refuge from persecution. A man named Clayborne, who had received a royal license to trade with the Indians in 1631, and had established himself on Kent Island, refused to acknowledge the authority of the Governor of Baltimore, and endeavored to arouse the hostility of the Indians against the new settlers. His efforts in this direction proved abortive, but in 1645 he was enabled by the aid of the Protestant refugees from other colonies, to raise a rebellion and drive Leonard Calvert, the Governor, to seek shelter in Virginia. The insurgents remained masters of the situation for nearly a year and a half, but at length Calvert returned with a body of troops and succeeded in re-establishing his authority. In 1649 the General Assembly was again convened. It was composed of eleven Catholics and three Protestants† and by it was passed the Toleration Act, a convincing and memorable proof of the truly Catholic and patriotic spirit of its authors. It ran as follows:

\* Bozman.

† Davis's "Day Star of American Freedom."



"Whereas the enforcing of conscience in matters of religion hath frequently fallen out to be of dangerous consequence in those commonwealths where it has been practised, and for the more quiet and peaceable government of this province, and the better to preserve mutual love and unity among the inhabitants; therefore be it enacted, that no person or persons whatsoever within this province or the islands, ports, harbors, creeks or havens thereunto belonging, professing to believe in Jesus Christ, shall from henceforth be anyways troubled, or molested, or discountenanced for, or in respect of his or her religion, nor in the free exercise thereof, within this province or the islands thereunto belonging, nor anyway compelled to the belief or exercise of any other religion, against his or her consent."\*

But this admirable law was not long permitted to remain in force, by those who, while loudly clamoring for religious liberty for themselves, shamefully denied it to those who differed from them in belief. Cromwell, supported by a Parliament which had decreed in 1644 that "no quarter should be given to any Irishman," who resisted its usurped authority over his country,† had become supreme in Britain and Ireland, and his adherents in the colony sought to obtain control of its government. They were successful. The Long Parliament in 1651 appointed commissioners, one of whom was Clayborne, to assume the government of Maryland. The natural result followed. An Assembly, from which Catholics were totally excluded, was called in 1654, which revoked the Toleration Act, and declared that those who professed the Faith of Columbus and Calvert were not entitled to the protection of the law. Referring to these outrageous proceedings Bancroft says† "The Puritans had neither the gratitude to respect the rights of

\* Bacon's laws.

† Bancroft, I., 261.

† Rushworth.

the government by which they had been received and fostered, nor magnanimity to continue the toleration, to which alone they were indebted for their residence in the colony." Stone, Lord Baltimore's representative, made an effort in the following year to assert his authority, but he was unsuccessful, and fell with his followers into the hands of his enemies, who put four of his party to death. In 1660, however, on the restoration of Charles II., the proprietary was restored to his rights, and by his direction Philip Calvert was appointed governor.

Matters went on quietly enough until the English changed masters in 1689, when the spirit of intolerance again displayed itself. A notorious atheist named Coode formed an "Association in arms for the defence of the Protestant religion etc.," and this body called a convention, which made various frivolous or false charges against Lord Baltimore, to William of Orange, and demanded that the government of the colony should be taken by the latter, into his own hands. Although the Protestants of Kent county sent a petition to the King, declaring that there was no ground for the accusation of Coode and his associates, and denouncing his falsehood and unfaithfulness, the request of the malcontents was complied with, and Sir Lionel Copley was sent over as royal governor. He convened a General Assembly in 1692, which established the Anglican church as the religion of the state and imposed a tax upon Catholics and members of other denominations for the support of the dominant sect. In 1704 new laws were passed "to prevent the further growth of Popery," of which, the following were some of the provisions:

"Catholic bishops and priests were forbidden to say Mass, or in any way exercise their ministry. Catholics were deprived of the right of elective franchise, unless they renounced their faith. They were forbidden to teach,



were obliged to support the established (Anglican) Church, and were forced to pay a double tax.) It was strongly recommended that "children were to be taken from the pernicious influence of Popish parents." And it was decreed that a Catholic child, by becoming a Protestant, could exact his share of property from his parents, 'as though they were dead.' Catholic emigrants were more-over forbidden to enter Maryland."\*

In 1706 the Quakers were allowed to hold meetings by the Assembly, though that "privilege" was denied to those who professed the faith of the founders of the colony. In the same year it was decreed that "Papists" should pay double the tax required from Protestants, and later those of the proscribed religion were "forbidden to appear in certain parts of the towns." The oppression and indignities to which the Catholics were subjected, at length drove them to think of obtaining deliverance from it by expatriation. In 1752 Daniel Carroll, father of Archbishop Carroll, went to France to endeavor to make arrangements for the removal of himself and his co-religionists to Louisiana, but although he had several interviews on the subject with the ministers of Louis XV., his mission led to no definite results. So matters remained until the period of the Revolution, when the Convention held at Annapolis, December 8, 1774, passed unanimously a resolution in which it was said, "As our opposition to the settled plan of the British administration to enslave America, will be strengthened by an union of all ranks of men in this province, we do most earnestly recommend, that all former differences about religion or politics \* \* \* from henceforth cease and be buried forever in oblivion, and we entreat, we conjure every man by his duty to God, his country and his posterity, cordially

\* O'Kane Murray, "History of the Catholic Church in the United States."

to unite in defence of our common rights and liberties." In 1775 Charles Carroll of Carrollton was chosen a member of the Maryland "Committee to prepare a Declaration of rights and a form of government for this State," and the result of his labors was, that Catholics were again admitted, to the enjoyment of all rights and privileges granted to their fellow-citizens, in the following year.

Notwithstanding all the disabilities, under which those inhabitants of Maryland who professed the faith of the great majority of the Irish people labored, the latter continued at intervals, in considerable numbers to seek a home there. According to Bozman the issue of the Irish Confederate war, 1641-52, "affected the population of the province," as indeed it also affected the other colonies, through the transportation thither of vast numbers of the Irish people by the Cromwellians. The violation of the Treaty of Limerick by William of Orange, drove many of those who had supported James II., but had remained in Ireland trusting to "British faith" to seek a new home beyond the Atlantic. Among the immigrants into Maryland somewhat later was the father of Archbishop Carroll. Of the vast numbers of Irish, the great majority of whom were members of the ancient faith, who were compelled by landlord enactments and "laws" against liberty of conscience as well as against national industries, to emigrate during the eighteenth century, prior to the Revolution, a very large proportion preferred to settle in Pennsylvania, owing to the comparative toleration accorded there to Catholics. It is to be observed, however, that considerable numbers of these, located near the borders of Maryland, a circumstance which seems to show, that while they did not wish to subject themselves to the disabilities imposed on those of their religion, in the province founded by Calvert, they at the same time were anxious to settle in the vicinity, of the large settlements of





their countrymen and kindred, who had at an early period made their home there.

Irish immigrants driven from their native land by landlord enactments and the coercive measures of the British government, poured in extraordinary numbers into Maryland, as indeed they did into all the other colonies, during the five or six years just preceding the Revolution. In a Baltimore paper of August 20, 1773, the following item is found, "Within this fortnight three thousand five hundred emigrants have arrived from Ireland.\* They brought with them bitter memories, which inspired them to become the most active and uncompromising enemies of British rule.† It is not assumed that immigration on this scale was kept up through the year, nor would it be correct to suppose that considerable numbers of Irish immigrants did not arrive in the "Land of the Sanctuary" during all the years above mentioned, because no accurate information on the subject has been handed down to us. The events then occurring in Ireland, and the enormous emigration to America to which they led, which will be alluded to later, justify the belief that the increase of Maryland's population from 85,000 in 1749 to 174,000 in 1775,‡ an increase of nearly ninety thousand in twenty-six years, was in great part owing to the rapid influx of Irish immigrants.

Before closing this chapter, attention may be called to the absurd view entertained by Englishmen of a certain class, with regard to the pride which Marylanders feel, in

\* *Maryland Journal and Baltimore Advertiser.*

† Lossing says, vol. 2, p. 193, referring to the events of 1776: "A large number of Presbyterians from the north of Ireland had settled in the province, and the principles of their ecclesiastical polity being favorable to Republicanism they exerted a powerful influence in casting off the royal yoke."

‡ Compendium of the seventh census, De Bow, Washington, 1854.

dwelling on the memory of the founder of their State. One of these wiseacres declared recently that "the good people of Baltimore pique themselves on being planted by a lord, while the neighboring States were planted by commoners." To lower their conceit he tells them that Lord Baltimore's title was derived from a mere honorary Irish barony, which gave him no place in the British House of Lords.\* His disclosure evidently failed to produce the appalling effect intended, for an eminent jurist of the Monumental City commenting on it, said, "Whether Calvert was lord or commoner, or commoner made lord, is to us a matter of profound indifference. \* \* \* We are proud of his great charter as one of the noblest works that human hands have ever reared, the most glorious proclamation ever made of the liberty of thought and worship. Had he been an Irish peasant instead of an Irish baron we should reverence him perhaps the more, and certainly feel none the less the honor of descending from the good brave men who made the precepts he bequeathed them, a practical and living truth."†

\* *London Athenæum.*

† S. T. Wallis—quoted in McSherry's Essay on the Early History of Maryland.



1. The first part of the document is a list of names and addresses of the members of the committee.

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE IRISH IN PENNSYLVANIA.

WILLIAM PENN, while a student at Oxford in 1660, became deeply impressed by the religious opinions professed by members of the Society of Friends. A few years later, while living at Cork, he joined the Quakers of that city and thenceforth became an ardent advocate of their doctrines. On his return to England, the persecution to which he and his brethren were subjected made him desirous of securing for the latter a home in the New World, where they could enjoy religious liberty. He held a claim against the government, bequeathed to him by his father Admiral Penn, which succeeded in obtaining from Charles II., in lieu of a grant of the territory now known as Pennsylvania. \* His charter was confirmed in 1681, and in the year of the following year he took possession of his province. He went to England in 1684, and during his absence, was thrown into prison by William of Orange on account of his attachment to the dethroned king James II. For the same reason deprived of the administration of affairs of his province, but succeeded in obtaining recognition of his proprietary rights in 1694. On his

in a letter written in 1681, says, that the province was named Pennsylvania in honor of his father the Admiral by Charles II. He adds, "New Wales, being a hilly country, and when the secretary, a Quaker, refused to call it New Wales I proposed Sylvania and they were not to it, though I much opposed them and went to the king to back out." Spencer, vol. i., p. 130.

return here in 1699 he was accompanied by James Logan \* a native of Lurgan, Armagh Co., Ireland, whom he appointed his Secretary, and who afterward became Chief Justice and President of the Council, in which latter capacity he governed the province from 1736 to 1738.

The liberal principles of the founder of Pennsylvania, and the assurances of civil and religious liberty, which he held out to all, as an inducement to settle in his province, attracted towards it favorable attention from many quarters and especially from Ireland, where he was so well known and so highly regarded, by the great majority of the people, because of his attachment to the cause of the sovereign for whom they had fought, as well as on account of the injuries he had suffered at the hands of William. The confiscation by the latter's greedy Parliament in 1692, of almost the last acre left in possession of the Catholics, and the Penal laws and formal violation of the Treaty of Limerick in 1695, induced many of those who professed the ancient Faith, to seek a new home beyond the Atlantic, in a colony distant from England, where land was to be had cheaply and where religious toleration was promised. Before long, too, the Irish of other denominations were made to feel

\* Logan was born in 1674. He learned Greek, Latin, and partially Hebrew before he was thirteen years old. At nineteen he had become acquainted with French, Italian and Spanish as well as mathematics, in which last especially he showed great ability. At different periods he filled the positions of Provincial Secretary, Commissioner of Property and Receiver General, Mayor of Philadelphia, Recorder of the City, and President Judge of Common Pleas, besides the offices mentioned above. He was a great friend of the Indians, and the celebrated Mingo chief Logan—whose famous speech has been preserved by Jefferson—was so named by his father Shikellimus, because of the latter's admiration for the distinguished Irishman. Logan died in 1751, leaving his large collection of books to form a public library. He has been well called "the friend of man, the friend of peace, and the friend of science."



the effects of English jealousy and prejudice, as well as to suffer through the ingratitude of the "Deliverer," who, having become ruler of Ireland, mainly through their efforts, repaid their services to him, in his characteristic manner, by the destruction of their most important and flourishing industry, the woolen manufacture. In June, 1698, the English lords presented an address to William, stating that the growing manufacture of cloth in Ireland invited his subjects of England to settle there, and requesting his interference to prevent its growth. Later in the same month the Commons made a similar request, and in reply the "glorious, pious and immortal" object of so much veneration, among some of the descendants of those he sought to ruin, showed his appreciation of Irish Protestant devotion, by saying, "I will do all that in me lies to discourage the woolen manufacture in Ireland,"\* and for once at least he kept his word. A "law" was speedily passed prohibiting the export of wool, yarn, and new or old drapery from Ireland to any other country except England, on pain of forfeiting the ship and cargo, and five hundred pounds for every offence. "The permission to export the woolen manufactures of Ireland to England was merely illusive, the duties on importation into the latter country being tantamount to a prohibition."† Other restrictive enactments followed and the result was, the almost complete ruin of the once flourishing Irish industry. Large numbers of those who had been engaged in it sought new homes in the colonies, and especially in Pennsylvania. Stewart† tells us that "The destruction of the woolen manufactures of Ireland compelled a multitude of the Episcopalian Protestants to desert the country" and Lord Fitzwilliam declares that these British laws against

\* Newenham, p. 103.  
 ‡ History of Armagh.

† Ibid.

Irish industry drove "100,000 operatives" away from their Native Land.

The Catholic Irish became so numerous in Philadelphia within a few years after the events above mentioned, that their assembling for the purpose of fulfilling their religious duties, attracted the attention and aroused the evil passions of some over-zealous bigots, who promptly informed the British government of these proceedings and no doubt demanded that a stop should be put to them. The "officers of the crown" were only too ready to hearken to the malicious fanatics, and reproached Penn because of the toleration extended to the adherents of the proscribed Faith in his province. He became alarmed and wrote to Logan in 1708, "There is a complaint against your government that you suffer public Mass in a scandalous manner. Pray send me the matter of fact, for ill use is made of it against us here."\*

After the accession of George, the Elector of Hanover, to the throne of England, the feeling of bitterness against the Irish Catholics became so rampant, that they were spoken of in all the debates of Parliament as "the common enemy," and even those who sympathized with their deplorable condition were styled "enemies of the constitution" and looked on with suspicion. They emigrated about this time in considerable numbers to Pennsylvania, and settled generally near the Maryland border. By an ordinance of 1720, the Irish located in Lancaster county were exempted from rents, "in consideration of their being a frontier people forming a kind of cordon of defence if needful."† Between 1720 and 1730 an extraordinary emigration from Ireland to America took place,‡ particularly during the three

\* Watson's Annals of Philadelphia.

† Watson.

‡ Potter's *American Monthly* for March, 1875, says: "A very large emigration from the North of Ireland to Pennsylvania took place between the years 1720 and 1730. They at once pushed to the frontier of Chester



last years of that period. In 1727 the Irish Catholics found themselves bereft of the last remnant of their liberties; they were deprived of the elective franchise, which was not restored to them until after the French Revolution. This outrage seems to have been the principal cause of the exodus by which it was followed, though at the same time there was a scarcity of corn in Ireland which led to riots at Cork and Limerick. In 1728 Stewart\* tells us there was "a considerable emigration from the North to America," which Primate Boulter, the head of the English faction, and certain dissenting ministers in vain endeavored to prevent. In 1729 Logan complains that payment of the tax of twenty shillings a head imposed on every "servant" arriving in the Province, was evaded in the case of the arrival from Dublin of a ship "with one hundred Papists and convicts." He adds, "It looks as if Ireland is to send all its inhabitants hither, for last week not less than six ships arrived and every day two or three arrive also. The common fear is that if they thus continue to come they will make themselves proprietors of the Province."† From December, 1728, to December, 1729, 5,655 Irish emigrants landed at Philadelphia.‡ During the same period 267 English and Welsh, 243 Palatines (Germans) and 43 Scotch arrived, the Irish being more than ten times as numerous as all the others taken together. In 1730 Logan complained that the

County, and settled along Chiogues, Alungo, Swatara and Paxtong Creeks, in the township of Donegal. They were a brave and hardy race." The following are some of the names mentioned by the *Monthly*: Davenport, Cartridge, Baily, Harris, Burt, Galbraith, Croghan, Lowery, McGinty, &c., &c. "The two latter," says the *Monthly*, "traveled Kentucky both ways, and explored it before Gist made his appearance south of the Ohio."

\* History of Armagh.

† Watson.

‡ Holmes' Annals of America.

Irish had possessed themselves of the whole of Conestoge manor of 15,000 acres, alleging that "it was against the laws of God and nature that so much land should be idle while so many Christians wanted it to labor on and to raise their bread."\* His successor, as secretary to the proprietaries, Richard Peters, a few years later sought to dispossess these settlers, and to measure the land, but they resisted, broke the surveyor's chain and compelled the sheriff and his posse to retire. They afterwards, however, made engagements for leases.† Gordon says, writing in 1806, "Emigration, which has since increased, was observed in Primate Boulter's time of office, (1724 to 1742), to draw over 3,000 people annually from Ulster."‡ In 1735 the action of the so-called Irish Parliament in abolishing tithes of agistment or pasturage, and thereby throwing an additional heavy burden on the tillers of the soil, led to a great increase in the number of emigrants to America.§ There can be no doubt that the enormous growth of the population of Pennsylvania, from 20,000 in 1701 to 250,000 in 1749,|| was mainly owing to the vast multitudes of Irish immigrants who found their way to the province during the period.

The cruelties and exactions of the rack-renting landlords of Ireland, and especially of the Marquis of Donegal, provoked an agrarian insurrection there in 1771, the suppression of which by the British government after a hard struggle, led multitudes of the people to emigrate to America. Of these the province founded by Penn received a considerable proportion. Spencer says on this subject, after referring to the great numbers of Irish immigrants who arrived here in 1771 and 1772, "Within the first fortnight of August, 1773, there arrived at Philadelphia three thousand five hundred

\* Watson.

§ Ibid.

† Ibid.

‡ Compendium of the seventh census,

§ History of Ireland.

[REDACTED]



emigrants from Ireland, and from the same document which has recorded this circumstance, it appears that vessels were arriving every month, freighted with emigrants from Holland, Germany, and especially from Ireland and the Highlands of Scotland."\*

"Redemptioner" was the appellation given to an immigrant who, having been unable to pay for his passage, undertook to work during a stipulated time for the party advancing the necessary funds. Some of these became wealthy and rose to distinguished positions.† More than one of the

\* History of the United States, vol. I., 306.

Watson says, "Some of these turned out frugal and industrious and came in time part of our wealthy citizens. In one case a servant was sold to be a lord and returned home to inherit his estate. The general story is to the following effect: Arthur Annesley (Lord Altham) married a daughter of the Duke of Buckingham, by whom he had a son. In the next year the parents had some difference which terminated in a separation. The father took exclusive possession of the child and manifested a fondness for him until the death of his wife, when his affections alienated from his offspring by a lady who aspired to become his second spouse. She succeeded in having the boy placed at a school in London, and soon after, Lord Altham dying, his brother, who wished to inherit the estate and title, caused the youth to be enticed on board an American vessel which sailed from Dublin in April, 1738. He was then in his thirteenth year, sold as a slave at Philadelphia, being then in his thirteenth year, sold as a slave, and actually served out twelve years in hard labor until an act, in the year 1740, brought him to such acquaintance as led to his return home. It happened that two Irishmen, John and William, travelling the Lancaster road, stopped at the house where young Annesley was in service. During a conversation with him they learned that he was a native of Wexford, where they also belonged, and finally learning who he was, they volunteered to go back to Ireland and testify to his existence and whereabouts, and they kept their promise. The young man secured a passage home, and succeeded in obtaining a pardon against his treacherous uncle, but the latter appealed to the House of Lords, and while the case was pending there, the young man died. His life formed the groundwork for the popular novel

Signers of the Declaration is said to have come to America as a redemptioner, and among the rest George Taylor of Pennsylvania, who at an early age, while studying medicine with a physician of his native town in Ireland, became tired of the profession, ran away from home and obtained a passage to Philadelphia on the terms above referred to. Many of his countrymen came over under similar conditions. Those able and willing to work were wanted here to till the soil, and immense numbers of young Irishmen availed themselves of the opportunities presented to them of escaping from the deplorable situation in which they were placed at home through British misrule, by consenting to labor for a limited time in order to repay the cost of their passage hither. The comparatively prosperous condition of England rendered her people far less willing to leave their own country, and kept emigration from it within narrow limits. Another very large class of emigrants from Ireland were styled "servants."\* The Penal laws enforced their "inflicted banishment to a colony and service therein as a penalty for the crime of practising many of the duties of

others, "Roderick Random" and "Florence McCarthy."—*Annals of Philadelphia*.

\* "In 1741 public information is given to merchants and captains that Augustus Gun of Cork, bellman, has power from the mayor there to procure servants for America for many years past." *Annals of Philadelphia*.

Watson says, "In some cases the severity of British laws pushed off young men of good abilities for very small offences. I have knowledge of two or three among us, even within my memory, who rose to riches and credit here and have left fine families. One great man, before my time, had been sold in Maryland as an offender in Ireland. While serving his master as a common servant, he showed much ability unexpectedly in managing for him an important lawsuit, for which he instantly made him free. He then came to Philadelphia and amassed a great fortune in landed estate, now of great value among his heirs." *Annals*.



lic religion, and the persons transported under those  
ere known as Irish servants."\*

early as 1686 Penn in a letter to his steward speaks  
old priest then living at Philadelphia. In the year  
l, mass was celebrated in a wooden building on the  
vest corner of Front and Walnut Streets in that city.†  
apel stood on the road leading from Nicetown to  
fort in 1729, connected with the house of Miss Eliza-  
McGawley, an Irish lady who had brought over a num-  
tenants and had settled in that place. Watson says,  
ay be a question whether this chapel may not have  
here before Miss McGawley settled there, even from  
rliest origin of the city, and adds "that it was put there  
tholics because their religion, however agreeable to  
tolerant spirit, was not so to most Protestants then in  
."‡ The writer named also speaks of a house on  
utheast corner of Chestnut and Second Streets, having  
"built for a Papal chapel before 1736," but adds that  
people opposed its being so used in so public a place."  
34 Governor Gordon "informed the Council that a  
(St. Joseph's Chapel) had been erected for the open  
ation of mass contrary to the statutes of William the  
The Council advised him to consult his superiors

hop England, Works, vol. iii.  
: and Times of Archbishop Carroll, *Cath. Magazine*, 1845.  
tson's *Annals*, vol. ii., 453.

note Watson says, "Near the place (one eighth of a mile off) is  
enclosure in which is a large tombstone of marble, inscribed with  
and the name 'John Michael Brown, Ob. 15 Dec., A. D. 1750.  
' He was a priest." DeCourcy, in his *Catholic Church in the*  
adds that this "did not escape the fury of the fanatics who in  
t fire to two of the Catholic Churches of Philadelphia. The  
one was broken by these miscreants, who sought to glut on the  
al of the dead their hatred of the living."

at home, and in the meantime they judged them (the Catho-  
lics) protected by the charter which allowed liberty of con-  
science."\* The chapel referred to was built by Father  
Greation, who had been sent from Maryland to Philadelphia  
in 1730. He was assisted for some time in the performance  
of his arduous duties by Father Henry Neale, who died  
there in 1748.† St. Mary's was built in 1763. From an  
early period in the history of Pennsylvania there were larger  
Catholic congregations at Lancaster, Goshenhoppen and  
Conewago, mainly composed of Irish, who had been driven  
from their native land by the violation of the Treaty of  
Limerick and the barbarous penal laws to seek a new home  
in America, but whose children were to have the satisfaction  
of avenging the wrongs done their fathers by overthrowing  
here the despotism which had oppressed them. The Irish  
"Pennsylvania Line" paid its share of "the deep debt so  
long due."

\* Watson.

† De Courcy's *Catholic Church in the U. S.*, translated and enlarged by  
John Gilmary Shea.



## CHAPTER V.

## THE IRISH IN NEW ENGLAND, NEW YORK AND NEW JERSEY.

ABOUT the beginning of the seventeenth century, many members of the Puritan sect, known as Independents or Brownists, took refuge in Holland from one of the religious persecutions, of which England had almost constantly been the theatre since Henry the Eighth sent More and Fisher to the scaffold. In a few years the number of the exiles increased considerably, and influenced by the favorable reports which reached them of the prosperity of the colony of New Netherland, (now New York,) they became desirous of settling there, and asked permission of the Dutch Government to do so.\* Their request was, however, refused, and they next sought and obtained permission from the Virginia Company to settle upon a part of its territory, and proceeded to England to complete arrangements for their voyage. After various delays and disappointments they finally sailed from Plymouth, intending to land near the Hudson River, but, according to some writers, through the treachery of the captain of their vessel, who was bribed by the Dutch, were carried further north, and at length landed from the *Mayflower* to the number of one hundred and one on Plymouth Rock, December 21, 1620. The severe hardships they encountered caused great loss of life among them, so that within three months one half of their number died, and notwithstanding fresh accessions of immi-

\* Prodhead's *History of the State of New York*.

grants the population of the settlement at the end of ten years did not amount to three hundred.

In 1628 the colony of Massachusetts Bay was founded, and two years later about one thousand immigrants began a settlement at Boston. Sickness, however, prevailed among them to such an extent that, within six months, more than two hundred of those poor people died, and many of the rest became disheartened and returned to England, spreading there alarming reports of difficulties and hardships encountered, which greatly tended to check emigration to the new colonies. The intolerant spirit displayed by the settlers was also calculated to prevent intending emigrants from desiring to locate among them. In 1631 they passed a law which declared that "no man should be admitted to the freedom of the body politic, but such as were members of the churches within the limits of the same," and the effect of this enactment will be understood from the fact that "in consequence of the difficulties attendant on becoming a member of one of the churches, not one fourth of the adult population were ever church members."\* Settlements were commenced at Dover and Portsmouth, New Hampshire, in 1623, which were joined to Massachusetts in 1641, and remained a part of that province for thirty-nine years, when the former district was constituted a separate colony. Connecticut was settled in 1636, and in the same year Roger Williams, banished from Massachusetts, founded Providence, Rhode Island.†

\* Spencer, vol. i.

† Williams is represented as one who favored "soul liberty," but he appears to have had a "fantastical scruple," according to Spencer, "as to the red cross in the English colors, which cross, being a relic of popery and abomination, he got Endicott, the commander at Salem to cut out from the national flag." Moreover, although the charter of Rhode Island, ratified by Chas. II., in 1662, provides that no person



The bitter contest between Charles I. and his Parliament put a stop to emigration to New England for a considerable time.\* Its population in 1647 did not exceed twenty thousand.† At the close of the Confederate War in Ireland, in 1652, it was found that the utter extirpation of the Irish people, which Clarendon tells us had been intended by the Cromwellians, "was still very difficult." It was therefore determined to expatriate as many as possible, and to crowd the remnant into the province of Connaught. Nearly forty thousand men, the greater part of whom had seen military service, were "permitted," however, to enter the service of foreign States, before this decision was made public.

The deserted lands of the other three provinces were then ordered to be divided among Cromwell's followers and friends, including some of the New England colonists, whose affairs were not in a prosperous condition. Prendergast says of this project: "Ireland was now, like an empty hive, prepared to receive its new swarm. One of the earliest efforts of the government towards replanting the parts reserved to themselves, was to turn toward the lately expatriated English in America. In the early part of the year 1651, when the country, by their own description to the

within the said colony shall be molested, punished, disquieted or called in question for any differences of opinion in matters of religion," yet the laws of the colony as first printed expressly excluded Catholics from the privilege of voting at elections or filling offices under the government.

\* "Now that the fountain began to be dried, and the stream turned another way, and many that intended to have followed their neighbors and friends into a land not sown, hoping by the turn of the times and the great changes that were then afoot to enjoy that, at their own doors and homes, which the others had travelled so far to seek abroad; there happened a total cessation of any passengers coming over; yea, rather, as at the turn of a tide, many came back, with the help of the same stream or sea that carried them thither," Hubbard,

† Spencer,

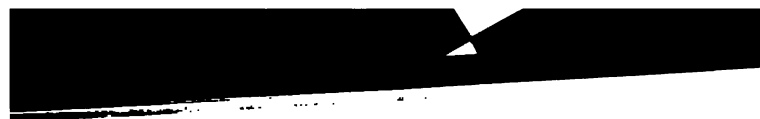
Council of State, was a scene of unparalleled waste and ruin, the Commissioners of Ireland affectionately urged Mr. Harrison, then a minister of the gospel in New England, to come over to Ireland, which he would find experimentally, was a comfortable seed-plot (so they said) for his labors. Mr. Harrison was unable to come; but proposals were made in 1655 for the planting of the town of Sligo, and lands thereabouts, with families from New England, and lands on the mile line, together with the two little islands called Oyster Island and Coney Island, were leased for one year from 10th of April, 1655, for the use of English families from New England in America.

"In 1656, several families arriving from New England at Limerick had the excise of tobacco, brought with them for the use of themselves and families, remitted; and other families in May and July of that year, who had come over from the same colony, were received as tenants of State lands near Garristown, in the County of Dublin, about fifteen miles north of the capital."\*

Large multitudes of women and children, however, still remained in Ireland, after the slaughter and expatriation of their natural protectors, and it was determined to get rid of them by transportation to America. The commissioners appointed by Cromwell to report on the condition of Ireland in 1652, urged among other measures "that Irish women as being too numerous now \* \* \* be sold to merchants and transported to Virginia, New England, Jamaica or other countries." Their advice was adopted. Immense numbers of people of both sexes and all ages were so treated. According to Bruodin† over one hundred thousand of the Irish race were thus swept from their native soil.

\* History of the Cromwellian Settlement in Ireland.

† *Propugnaculum*. (Piaga anno 1669.)



1

2





Dr. Lingard says that a letter in his possession, written in 1656, gives the number of those victims of English hate, carried away up to that year to America, at sixty thousand.\* Prendergast gives the following details:

"Just as the King of Spain sent over his agents to treat with the government for the Irish swordsmen, the merchants of Bristol had agents treating with it for men, women and girls to be sent to the sugar plantations in the West Indies and to New England. The Commissioners of Ireland gave them orders upon the governors of garrisons to deliver to them prisoners of war; upon masters of work-houses for the destitute in their care, 'who were of an age to labor, or if women who were marriageable, and not past breeding,' and gave directions to all in authority to seize those who had no visible means of livelihood, and deliver them to these agents of the British merchants, in execution of which latter order, Ireland must have exhibited scenes in every part like the slave hunts in Africa. How many girls of gentle birth must have been caught and hurried to the private prisons of these men-catchers, none can tell. But at last, the evil became too shocking and notorious, particularly when these dealers in Irish flesh began to seize the daughters and children of the English themselves, and to force them on board their slave ships; then, indeed, the orders, at the end of four years, were revoked. Messrs. Sellick and Leader, Mr. Robert Yeoman, M. Joseph Lawrence and others, all of Bristol, were active agents. As one instance out of many:—Captain John Vernon was employed by the Commissioners for Ireland into England, and contracted in their behalf with Mr. Daniel Sellick and Mr. Leader, under his hand, bearing date 14th of September, 1653, to supply them with 50 women of the Irish nation, above twelve years and

\* *History of England*, vol. x., p. 336.

under the age of forty-five; also 300 men above twelve years of age and under fifty, to be found in the country within twenty miles of Cork, Youghal, and Kinsale, Waterford and Wexford, to transport them into New England."\*

That people brought from their native land under such circumstances left but few traces upon the records of New England, will excite no surprise. But it cannot be doubted that they greatly contributed to the increase of its population. The number of Irish, transported to the British colonies in America, from 1651 to 1660, exceeded the total number of their inhabitants at that period, a fact which ought not to be lost sight of by those who undertake to estimate the strength of the Celtic element in this nation. They were poor: cut off from their old associations: deprived of the means of practising the duties of their religion: and in most cases regarded with prejudice by those among whom they were thrown: their children, consequently, in a generation or two, lost pride in preserving the memory of their origin, and took no interest in preserving the traditions of their ancestors.

An incident which occurred in 1676, however, illustrates the kindly feeling of the Irish people toward the New England settlers. At that time, in consequence of the havoc wrought by King Philip and his allies, the colonists suffered from famine. When the news of their distress reached Ireland a ship freighted with supplies of all kinds, to the value of nearly one thousand pounds or five thousand dollars,† was sent from Dublin to Boston, the proceeds of which were divided among one hundred and sixteen destitute families of the latter city.

A few years later a scene of a different character was wit-

\* *Cromwellian Settlement in Ireland*.

† Chief Justice Daly states the amount as above.



nessed there. In 1688, "the last year of the administration of Andros in Massachusetts," says Bancroft, "the daughter of John Goodwin, a child of thirteen years, charged a laundress with having stolen linen from the family. Glover, the mother of the laundress, a friendless immigrant almost ignorant of English, like a true woman with a mother's heart, rebuked the false accusation. Immediately the girl to secure revenge became bewitched. The infection spread. Three others of the family, the youngest a boy of less than five years old, soon succeeded in equally arresting public attention \* \* \* Cotton Mather went to pray by the side of one of them, and lo! the child lost her hearing till prayer was over. What was to be done? The four ministers of Boston and the one of Charlestown assembled in Goodwin's house and spent a whole day in fasting and prayer. In consequence the youngest child, the one of five years, was delivered. But if the ministers could thus by prayer "deliver" a possessed child, there must have been a witch. The honor of the ministers required a prosecution of the affair, and the magistrate, William Stoughton, being one, with 'vigor,' which the united ministers commended as just, made a discovery of the wicked 'instrument of the devil.' The culprit was evidently an Irishwoman of a strange tongue. Goodwin, who made the complaint, had no proof that could have done her hurt, but the 'old hag' whom some thought 'crazed in intellects,' was bewildered and made strange answers, which were taken as confessions, sometimes in her excitement using her native dialect. \* \* \* It was plain the owner was a Catholic; she had never learned the Lord's Prayer in English; she could repeat the Pater Noster fluently enough, but not quite correctly; so the ministers and Goodwin's family had the satisfaction of getting her con-

demned and executed as a witch." \* "The girl," adds the historian, who knew herself to be a deceiver, had no remorse, and it never occurred to the ministers that vanity and love of power had blinded their judgment.†

The number of Irish and their immediate descendants at this period was considerable, and it was soon largely augmented by the great immigration from Ireland which followed the successful efforts of William of Orange and his Parliament for the destruction of the Irish woolen manufacture. Lord Bellamont, an Irish peer of agreeable manners and very popular with all parties, though a bigot like the rest of his class, was Governor of Massachusetts from 1699 to 1701, when he suddenly died. It was he who in 1700 caused the arrest of the famous pirate Captain Kidd, and sent him to England to be tried and executed. About the year 1718, "a large body of immigrants arrived from Londonderry, bringing with them the manufacture of linen and the implements used in Ireland. The matter was earnestly taken up by the people of Boston, and it was decided to establish a spinning school there. Those immigrants likewise introduced the general use of the potato." ‡ (Among the "redemptioners" who landed in Massachusetts in 1723 was John Sullivan of Killarney, Kerry county, or, as some assert, of Limerick, the father of Major-General Sullivan, who, on December 16, 1774, struck the first blow in the Revolutionary struggle, by capturing Fort William and Mary, near Portsmouth, N. H., and carrying off the artillery and ammunition stored there. There was considerable jealousy manifested about this time at the large influx of Irish into New England. The General Court of Massachusetts, in 1720, warned certain families recently

\* *History of the United States*, vol. iii.

† Bancroft.

‡ *Landmarks of Boston*, Drake.



arrived from Ireland who had presumed to make a settlement, to move off within the space of seven months, threatening, in case of non-compliance, that the offenders should "be prosecuted by the attorney-general by writs of trespass and ejectment." In 1725 a meeting held at Haverhill, to begin the settlement of Concord, decided that "no alienation of any lot should be made without the consent of the community," the object of this regulation being the exclusion of Irish settlers, "against whom a strong national prejudice existed, heightened perhaps by zeal in differing religious opinions."\* But these unfriendly manifestations were disregarded, and the people against whom they were directed continued to arrive and settle and spread in the inhospitable territory.

In 1737 the Irish element in Boston, had become so numerous that at a meeting of its principal members held on St. Patrick's Day of that year, it was decided to form a national and benevolent organization to be known as the Charitable Irish Society, and to be composed of men of Irish birth or extraction. This was the first association of the kind established on the continent of America, the pioneer in the path of Irish American progress, and it still flourishes in undiminished vigor, old in years but young in spirit, like the nation whose name it bears, and which has such right good reason to be proud of it. It has given gallant soldiers and general officers of distinguished merit to the Republic not only in the first struggle against British despotism, but in later conflicts, and especially in that for the preservation of the Union, and gives to-day promise of a future as brilliant as its past has been glorious.

One defect in the original constitution of the society may be noted here, though perhaps it might seem ungenerous to

\* *Hist. Coll. of N. H.*

allude to a matter of the kind when more than a century has elapsed since its removal. One of the rules declared that the managers or officers of the organization should be Protestants. The bitter spirit of the British constitution, and the blighting influence of British penal laws, made themselves then felt, even among the warm-hearted sons of Ireland who engaged in a work of benevolence and patriotism. But the obnoxious clause was soon stricken out, and thenceforth Irishmen of all creeds stood upon an equal footing as members of the association.

The names of the twenty-six original members of the Society are as follows:—Robert Duncan, Andrew Knox, Nathaniel Walsh, Joseph St. Lawrence, Daniel McFall, Edward Allen, William Drummond, William Freeland, Daniel Gibbs, John Noble, Adam Boyd, William Stewart, Daniel Neal, James Mayes, Samuel Moor, Philip Mortimer, James Egart, George Glen, Peter Pelham, John Little, Archibald Thomas, Edward Alderchurch, James Clark, John Clark, Thomas Bennett and Patrick Walker.

The meetings were continued uninterruptedly until 1775, after which date none were held until 1784, a proof that the members "were not idle spectators of the great and successful effort made by America for its independence. \* \* \* When heart and hand and blood were required in the cause of liberty they contributed their share most cheerfully, and when the cause had triumphed and they rested from their labors, one of the first acts of the society on resuming its meetings and intercourse was to congratulate each other on the success which had attended their efforts."§

Among the many names of Revolutionary patriots which a glance at the records of the Charitable Irish Society reveals, may be mentioned those of Major-General Henry

• President Boyd's Centennial Address, St. Patrick's Day, 1837.



Knox, Brig-Gen. Simon Elliot, Capts. Ash, Callahan, Dalton, Dunn, Fletcher, Howard, Leslie, Malcolm, McNeil, McClure, McCordey, Mackay, Magee, and others. Capt. Malcolm died early in the struggle, and his tombstone in Copps Hill burying ground served King George's soldiers for a target, upon which the mark of the bullets are yet to be seen. Rev. John Moorhead, first pastor of the Old Presbyterian Meeting House, who left Ireland in 1730 and became a member of the Society in 1739, was an energetic patriot. The Daughters of Liberty, previous to the Revolution, used to meet at his house, where they were treated with the greatest kindness. "The founders of his congregation were Irish Presbyterians, and their first house of worship was a barn which sufficed until they were able, in 1744, to build a neat wooden edifice.\* It was in this church that the State Convention met in 1788, to ratify the Federal Constitution.

Peter Pelham, an original member of the Society, is the first Boston engraver of whom mention is made. He was also a painter of some reputation. Having married the widow of Copley, a tobacconist, he taught the rudiments of art to her son, J. S. Copley,† who afterward went to England where he acquired great reputation as a painter, and became the father of Lord Lyndhurst, so well known for his denunciation of the Irish as "aliens in blood, language and religion."

In 1719 Londonderry in New Hampshire was colonized "by one hundred Irish families who introduced the spinning wheel and the culture of flax and potatoes."‡ They rapidly increased in numbers. "In process of time the descendants of the Londonderry settlers spread over Wind-

\* Drake's *Landmarks of Boston*, p. 263.

‡ Marmion's *Maritime Poets of Ireland*.

† *Landmarks of Boston*.

ham, Chester, Litchfield, Manchester, Bedford, Goffstown, New Boston, Antrim, Peterborough and Ackworth, in New Hampshire, and Barnet in Vermont. They were also the first settlers of many towns in Massachusetts, Maine and Nova Scotia."\* About 1738, according to Spencer, "The manufacture of linen was considerably increased by the coming of Irish emigrants.† At the same period the town of Dublin, N. H., was founded and named after the Irish capital. In the petition for incorporation it is described as a tract of land commonly called and known by the name of Dublin (or Monadnock). When it was first called by the name of Dublin does not appear."‡ Irish immigrants in large numbers continued for a long time to seek a home in this quarter, and when the tocsin of Revolution sounded, their children followed Stark, Reed and Poor, to fight under the standard of liberty.

In 1723 a colony of Irish arrived in Maine, and gave the name of Belfast to the first settlement which they found. Others of their nationality following in their footsteps located in the vicinity of Bangor and Kittery, where Whipple was one of the Irish-American Signers of the Declaration, born in 1730, and Machias, where Maurice O'Brien, of Connecticut, reared up the five sturdy sons, who at the dawn of the Revolution won for the young Republic its first naval victory.

Among the arrivals here, in the year 1726, was the father of Matthew Thornton and his family, who settled in Connecticut. The future Signer, however, after some years having studied medicine, removed to New Hampshire. Matthew Lyon was among the Redemptioners who came over in 1759. He was first assigned to one Bacon Woodbury, who afterwards transferred him to Hugh Hann-

\* Barstow's *New Hampshire*,  
‡ *History of Dublin, N. H.*

† Spencer, vol. i., p. 1.





of Litchfield, for two stags. Other Irish immigrants settled about this time at Saybrook and other towns in Connecticut. In 1729 Berkeley, Anglican Bishop of Cloyne, came over and settled near Newport, R. I., where he waited for three years expecting that the English government would send on money voted him by the Parliament, to enable him to carry out a project of converting the "savage Americans to Christianity." He waited in vain, however, and at the end of the period named returned to Ireland, after having given his farm of ninety acres, and "the finest collection of books that ever came at one time into America," to Yale College.

#### NEW YORK AND NEW JERSEY.

Henry Hudson, a famous explorer in the service of the Dutch East India Company, in 1609 sailed up the river which bears his name, but which had been previously discovered by some Spanish navigators. He ascended the river as far as Albany, and returning soon after called in at Dartmouth, England, where his ship and himself were seized and held for eight months. At the end of that time the ship was allowed to finish her voyage to Holland, but Hudson was still not permitted to depart, and was soon sent out on another exploring expedition, from which, however, he never returned. The Dutch, on receiving the reports of the discoveries made by their officer, despatched vessels to open a trade with the Indians, caused forts to be erected at several points, and named their newly-acquired territory New Netherlands, and its principal post New Amsterdam, (now New York). The English, not satisfied with their already very large possessions on this side of the ocean, wished to own the whole continent, and manifested annoyance and anger at the progress of the Dutch. So bitter was their feeling that when Minuet, the Director General of

the new colony, was driven by stress of weather, while returning home in 1632, to take shelter in Plymouth, the English officials detained him, and affected to look upon him as an intruder on their territory. Wrangling continued between the English and Dutch colonists until 1664, when a body of British troops seized upon New Netherlands which was thenceforth called, except during a very brief interval, New York, in honor of the Duke of York, afterwards James II.

There were, at least, a few Irish at an early period in this colony. Father Jogues, the noble Jesuit missionary, says in a letter written in 1642, that he found a young Irishman whose confession he heard, on the Island of Manhattan. In 1653 Father Poncet administered the Sacraments of Penance and Holy Communion to two Catholics, presumably Irish whom he met at Fort Orange (Albany). In 1683 Thomas Dongan, Earl of Limerick, an Irish Catholic, was appointed governor of the colony, to succeed Sir Edmund Andros. In October of that year he convened the first Legislative Assembly ever held in New York. Like Lord Baltimore he was opposed to religious persecution, and the first act passed by the Assembly declared that "no person or persons who profess faith in God by Jesus Christ, shall at any time be any ways molested, punished or disquieted; but that all and every such person or persons may from time to time and at all times, freely have and fully enjoy his or their judgments or consciences, in matters of religion, throughout all the province." This body also provided for the election of its members every three years. A short time after the Governor gave charters to the cities of New York and Albany.

Governor Dongan favored immigration. In a letter to the Lord President he says, "It will be very necessary to send over men to build those forts. \* \* \* My Lord,



REDACTED

there are people enough in Ireland who had pretences to estates there, and are of no advantage to the country, yet may live here very happy. I do not doubt, if his majesty think fit to employ my nephew, he will bring over as many as the King will find convenient to send, who will be no charge after they are landed."\* A Catholic college was

\* *N. Y. Hist. Soc.*, vol. i. 256.

Thomas Dongan was the son of Sir John Dongan, an Irish baronet, and was born in 1634. He had eight brothers and three sisters. At the close of the Confederate War he joined the French army, but in 1677, Charles II. issued an order recalling all British subjects in foreign service and he returned home. In 1683 as, above stated, he was made Governor of New York. The Charter of charters and privileges, adopted under his direction in 1683, decreed that there should be no taxes imposed except by act of the Governor and Assembly. In 1687, the Declaration of Indulgence was promulgated, which authorized public worship by any sect and abolished all religious qualifications for office.

At the close of his services as Governor "he was offered a regiment and the rank of Major-General by King James, but he refused, and retired to his county seat on Long Island." When the news of the change reached New York, Leisler seized the fort and pretended that the partisans of King James had formed a plot to seize the province. Dongan, charged with being a Papist, was hunted about from place to place, and writs issued for his apprehension. After lying in the bay for a fortnight, waiting to sail for England, stress of weather compelled his return. He escaped to Rhode Island and reached England in 1691. Dongan found his brother, the Earl of Limerick, an exile, and the family estates confiscated. His brother died in 1698 and he became Earl of Limerick. An Act of Parliament was passed in 1702 recognizing his claim to the family estates, but he could only redeem them on payment of incumbrances placed on them by the Dutch general to whom they were given, and in 1714 he states that, after paying his brother's debts and his own, he had little left for his support. In December, 1715, the last Earl of Limerick of his race died peacefully in London. On his tombstone, at St. Pancras, is the inscription: "The Right Hon. Thos. Dongan, Earl of Limerick, died Dec. 14, 1715, aged 81 years. *Requiescat in pace. Amen.*" Hon. James W. Gerard, says: "He was a man of experience in war and politics, and filled the public duties of

founded on Manhattan Island at this time, and three priests were stationed there. But on the accession of the Prince of Orange to the English throne, bigotry again grew rampant. Leisler, a merchant of New York, usurped the government, and addressed a letter to William justifying his act. He at the same time caused statements to be published, in which was affirmed the need of protecting "the security of the Protestant religion," and it was added that "the Papists on Staten Island did threaten to cut inhabitants' throats and to come and burn the city;" that a certain individual "had arms in his house for fifty men; that eighty or a hundred men were coming from Boston and other places who were hunted away, and that there were several of them Irish and Papists; that a good part of the soldiers

his difficult post with activity and wisdom. He was considerate and moderate in his government—just and tolerant—and his personal character was that of an upright and courteous gentleman. Illickley, of Plymouth, a zealous Puritan, declares that, "he was of a noble, praiseworthy mind and spirit, taking care that all the people in each town do their duty in maintaining the minister of the place though himself of a different opinion of their way," and Dominic Silgus wrote to the *classis* at Amsterdam, that Gov. Dongan was "a man of knowledge, politeness, and friendliness."

We trace "the footsteps of the Celt" at Albany at an early period of its history. It was taken by Capt. Manning, acting under the order of Lord Lovelace, in 1664. The Dutch retook it in 1673, and among the soldiers then found in it were Capt. John Manning, Sergts. Patrick Dowdall and John Fitzgerald, and Lewis Collins and Thomas Quinn. There were only fifty soldiers in all. That there were Irishmen in the province prior to that time cannot be proved from the absence of Irish names in the records, for the Dutch so modified the orthography, that no linguist could trace them. As, for instance, in the ancient records of this County it will be found that in the year 1657 a conveyance was made to Jan Andriesse (the Irishman at Katskill). Certainly without the addition, nobody would ever suspect his nationality.

Hon. H. Reiley's Address at Bi-Centennial celebration, July 22, 1886.



in the fort already were Papists," etc.\* William did not reply to the letter of his would-be friend, but sent Col. Slaughter out as governor, who tried and hanged Leisler and his son-in-law as rebels and traitors. The Assembly, called together in 1691, passed a resolution declaring all laws passed by the late Assembly null and void. This of course destroyed the effect of Dongan's "Charter of Liberty." A "Bill of Rights" was then passed, by which Catholics were deprived of the sacred right of liberty of conscience. This precious pronouncement declared "Nothing herein mentioned or contained shall extend to give liberty for any persons of the Romish religion to exercise their manner of worship contrary to the laws and statutes of their majesties' kingdom of England."† In 1697 this was repealed, or rather one much more severe was substituted for it. By this last "law" every priest, etc., remaining in or coming into the province after November, 1700, should be "deemed and accounted an incendiary and disturber of the public peace and safety, and an enemy to the true Christian religion, and should be adjudged to suffer perpetual imprisonment." In case of escape and capture he was to undergo death, and those guilty of giving him shelter were to pay a fine of \$1,000 and to stand three days in the pillory. In 1701 another enactment was made by which "Papists and Popish recusants were prohibited from voting for members of Assembly, or any office whatever from thenceforth and forever!"‡

The natural result followed. We are told that the cry of "the Church in danger" was often heard on elections and other occasions, in New York at this time. A man did

\* N. Y. Hist. Doc., vol. iii.

† Journal of Legislative Council of New York.

‡ Hist. Cath. Church in New York.

not dare avow himself a Catholic—it was odious. A chapel would then have been pulled down.\*

In 1741, when New York City contained from twelve to twenty thousand† inhabitants, a pretended plot was detected which led to the judicial murder of a larger number of people, including one who is believed by most writers to have been a Catholic priest, John Ury. Several fires had broken out in different places within a short time, and the rumor was started that they had been caused by negroes, who formed at that period almost one-sixth of the population. Many persons were arrested, and tried for alleged complicity in this supposed plot, two white men and eighteen negroes were hanged, fourteen of the latter burned, and seventy-one transported and sold, chiefly in the West Indies. From the reports of these proceedings which have reached us it is evident that New York contained a number of Catholics, and that the old superstitious dread of what was called "Popery," by the fanatical and ignorant, still exercised a demoralizing influence over the minds of many.

Many settlements throughout New York State were founded by Irish immigrants, at a comparatively early period. New Windsor, the oldest town in Orange county, was first settled in 1731 by Irish immigrants‡ at the head of whom was Charles Clinton, father of General James Clinton,

\* Hist. Cath. Church in New York.

† Hist. Cath. Church in New York says 12,000; O'Kane Murray, 20,000.

‡ McKenzie's Remarkable Irishmen; History of Orange County, etc. Near the old church of Fort Herkimer, or Mohawk, about four miles west of Little Falls, Herkimer county, is to be seen a large brown sandstone slab, placed there by the Provincial government, on which is the following inscription: "Here repositeth the body of John Ring, Esq., of the kingdom of Ireland \* \* \* who departed this life the 20th day of September, 1755, in the 30th year of his age."—Lossing.



utionary fame, and  
astern portion of  
Irish immigrants,  
d to keep up the  
unity, and contrib-  
d mass of popula-

ame here in 1734  
the Mohawk valley  
by his uncle. He  
ttlers, particularly  
number of Irish  
ate. Those whom  
ike himself, Irish.  
and attended to his  
od; his physician,  
l which he erected  
Indian language  
by honest trading  
conformed to their  
rant, the Mohawk  
e Six Nations was  
from joining the  
He died in 1774.

gh were the fami-  
on, Wear, Burnet,  
nd. Cherry Val-  
ts from the Irish  
ny others of the  
e begun by Irish-  
here was an early  
free and noble-  
f 300,000 acres,

The Irish came in great numbers to New York as to other States, just before the Revolution. In *Rivington's Gazette* of Aug. 4, 1774, appears the following item:—

"Yesterday arrived the *Needham*, Captain Cheevers, with 300 passengers from Newry, the times of servants of both sexes to be disposed of to pay for their passage."

New Jersey began at an early period to receive considerable accessions to its population from Ireland. Thomas Sharp, a Dublin Quaker, who came over about 1680, and settled in Newtown, has left an account of the emigration of his party, in which he says: "Let it be remembered that, it having wrought upon ye minds of some friends that dwelt in Ireland, and a pressure being laid upon them for some years, from which they could not remove until they gave up to leave their friends and relatives there, with their comfortable subsistence, to transport themselves and families into this wilderness. In order, thereto, they sent from Dublin, in Ireland, to one Thomas Lunkin, a Friend in London, commander of a punk, who came and made his agreement to transport them into New Jersey. But while the ship lay at Dublin, Thomas Lunkin, getting sick, remained behind, and put the command under his mate, John Daggar, who set sail the 19th, 9th month (two months) following, where they were well entertained at the house of the Thompsons, who had before gone from Ireland in 1677. These had attained a good living by their industry. From there we went to Salem, where were several houses that were vacant of persons who had left the town to settle in the country. In these we resided for the winter, which proved to be moderate. At Wickacoa (Philadelphia) we purchased a boat of the Swansons, and so went to Burlington, to the commissioners, of whom we obtained a warrant of survey from the then surveyor-general, Daniel Seeds.





Then, after some considerable search to and fro in what was then called the third of Irish tenth, we at last pitched upon the place then called Newtown, which was before the settlement of Philadelphia. In the spring of 1682 we all removed from Salem, together with Robert Zane, who had before come with the Thompsons from Ireland, and was also expecting us. So we began then our settlement; and though we were at times pretty hard bestead, having all our provisions, as far as Salem, to fetch by water, yet, through the mercy of God, we were preserved in health and from any extreme difficulty. A meeting was immediately set up at the house of Mark Newby, and in a short time it grew and increased, into which Mr. Cooper and family, that lived at the Poynte, resorted. We had then zeal and fervency of spirit, although we had some dread of the Indians as a salvage people, nevertheless, ye Lord turned them to be serviceable to us, and to be very loving and kinde. Let, then, the rising generation consider that the settlement of this country was directed upon an impulse, by the spirit of God's people, not so much for their ease and tranquillity as for their posterity, and that the wilderness, being planted with a good seed, might grow and increase. But should not these purposes of the good husbandman come to pass, then they themselves shall suffer loss. These facts I have thought good thus to leave behind, as one having had knowledge of these things from the beginning."\*

---

\* Appendix to Watson's Annals of Philadelphia.

## CHAPTER VI.

### THE IRISH IN THE SOUTH.

THE first permanent settlement in Virginia was begun at Jamestown in 1607. For many years the emigrants had great difficulties to contend with, and the reports of their privations were calculated to retard emigration to the colony. James the First, in 1619, sent there one hundred convicts taken out of the prisons and sold for a term of years, and this practice, we are told, was continued up to the reign of George III. It need not be supposed that, in the great majority of cases, the men then sent to Virginia were criminals of the ordinary type. Obstinate peasants who resisted the inclosure of commons, and often political offenders, formed a considerable proportion of those who were transported to the colony. In the year above mentioned the treasurer of the London company to which the territory had been granted, shipped to Virginia a number of young women who became the wives of the colonists on payment to the company of one hundred pounds of tobacco for each of them.

In 1652 Cromwell's commissioners appointed to report on the condition of Ireland, advised that "Irish women as being too numerous now \* \* \* be sold to merchants and transported to Virginia, New England, Jamaica, or other countries." The suggestion was acted on, and the number of women and children transported from Ireland to the West Indies and the colonies named, exceeded the entire white population of those territories at that period.



CA.

and fro in what  
at last pitched  
was before the  
g of 1682 we all  
Zane, who had  
Ireland, and was  
settlement; and  
stead, having all  
by water, yet,  
erved in health  
ing was immedi-  
, and in a short  
Mr. Cooper and

We had then  
had some dread  
heless, ye Lord  
be very loving  
on consider that  
ed upon an im-  
much for their  
y, and that the  
ed, might grow  
ses of the good  
lves shall suffer  
us to leave be-  
ese things from

elphia.

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

57

### CHAPTER VI.

#### THE IRISH IN THE SOUTH.

THE first permanent settlement in Virginia was begun at Jamestown in 1607. For many years the emigrants had great difficulties to contend with, and the reports of their privations were calculated to retard emigration to the colony. James the First, in 1619, sent there one hundred convicts taken out of the prisons and sold for a term of years, and this practice, we are told, was continued up to the reign of George III. It need not be supposed that, in the great majority of cases, the men then sent to Virginia were criminals of the ordinary type. Obstinate peasants who resisted the inclosure of commons, and often political offenders, formed a considerable proportion of those who were transported to the colony. In the year above mentioned the treasurer of the London company to which the territory had been granted, shipped to Virginia a number of young women who became the wives of the colonists on payment to the company of one hundred pounds of tobacco for each of them.

In 1652 Cromwell's commissioners appointed to report on the condition of Ireland, advised that "Irish women as being too numerous now \* \* \* be sold to merchants and transported to Virginia, New England, Jamaica, or other countries." The suggestion was acted on, and the number of women and children transported from Ireland to the West Indies and the colonies named, exceeded the entire white population of those territories at that period.

[REDACTED]

It may be remarked here that this atrocious system of seizing and transporting the Irish to America did not, as is generally supposed, terminate with the restoration of Charles II. In 1699 Father Garganel, S. J., superior of the Island of Martinique, asked for one or two Irish Fathers for that and the neighboring islands, which were "full of Irish;" for he continues, "every year ship loads of men, boys, and girls, partly crimped, partly carried off by main force for purposes of slave trade, are conveyed by the English from Ireland."\*

In course of time many of those who had been transported

\* Lenehan's History of Limerick. The following extract is from the work just quoted of the numbers, and the terrible situation of the expropriated Irish in those Islands. In 1652 "twenty-five thousand Irishmen, sold as slaves in Saint Kitt's and the adjoining islands, petitioned for a priest. Through the Admiral du Poenry the petition was placed in Father Hartegan's hands. He was a Limerick Jesuit. He volunteered himself and disappeared from our view. As he spoke Irish, English, and French, he was very fit for that mission, which was always supplied with Irish Jesuits from Limerick for more than a hundred years afterwards. It is thought that Father Hartegan assumed the name of De Stritch, to avoid giving umbrage to the English, for, in the year 1650, according to letters written five years after the petition, an Irish Father De Stritch was welcomed and blessed by the Irish of Saint Kitt's, heard the confessions of three thousand of them, then went disguised as a timber merchant to Montserrat, employed numbers of Irish as woodcutters, revealed his real character to them, and spent the mornings administering the sacraments, and the day in hewing wood, to throw dust in the eyes of the English. Meanwhile the heretics, jealous of the religious consolations of the Catholics of Saint Kitt's, treated them with great cruelty, transported one hundred and fifty of the most fervent and respectable to Crab Island, where they left them to die of starvation. This blow fell heavy on the heart of poor Father De Stritch. He got together as many of the Irish of Saint Kitt's as he could, and passed with them to the French island of Guadeloupe, where he lived a long time with them, now and then going in disguise to help the Irish of the neighboring isles."

to the West Indies in this manner found their way to the colonies on the continent, in search of greater freedom and a more healthful climate. They were enabled to do so without much difficulty, owing to the fact that many of their countrymen had managed, notwithstanding all the obstacles in their way, to engage in the trade carried on by the people of New England and the other provinces with those of Barbadoes and the adjacent islands. Many Irishmen commanded vessels engaged in this trade and not a few soon became owners themselves.

In 1690 an Irish trader named Doherty from Virginia visited the Cherokees and afterwards lived among them for a number of years.\* Like many others of his countrymen he was among the earliest pioneers of civilization in the then unknown West. The first Presbyterian minister regularly settled in Virginia was a native of Donaghy Antrim county, named Craig, born in 1709 who emigrated to America at an early age.† In 1693 "Thomas Neal obtained a patent for establishing a post in the colonies: rates proportioned to those of the English post-office." Under the government of William Gouch, who assumed the duties of office in 1727, Virginia received large accessions of Irish emigrants. Those who had received grants of frontier lands, especially Hite, Beverly and Burden, "sent out advertisements to meet the emigrants as they landed on the Delaware, and also as they were about to leave their native land, offering favorable terms to actual settlers; and soon after Hite removed his farm to Opecquon. The Irish immediately from Ireland began to rear habitations around him and his sons-in-law, Bowman and Christian, and near to Stephens and McKay. Samuel

\* Ramsay's Annals of Tennessee. † Foote's Sketches of Virginia.

‡ Spencer, vol. 1.



took his residence at the head spring of the Opec-  
having purchased from Hite 16,000 acres. A son-  
Becket, was seated between Mr. Glass and North  
ain. His son David took his residence a little  
his father, at Cherry Mead. His son Robert was  
a little further down, at Long Meadows. \* \* \*

down the creek was Joseph Colovin and his family.  
came John Wilson and the Marquis family, with  
he was connected. Next were the McAuleys, and  
William Hoge. Adjoining these, to the south, were  
en family, a part of whom speedily removed to Front

The McGill family now occupy their position

A little beyond the village lived Robert Wilson;  
idence remains to this day. A little down the  
lived James Vance, son-in-law of Sam Glass, and  
r of a numerous race—most of whom are to be  
west of the Alleghanies. Those were all as early as  
r, '37.(\*) \* \* \* There is a limestone pyramid  
ells us it was reared to the memory of Samuel Glass  
ary Gamble, his wife, who came from Banbridge,  
Down, Ireland, and were among the early settlers,  
their abode on the Opecquon in 1736."

ong others who came to Virginia about this time  
was an Irish girl named Polly Mulhollin. On  
ival she was hired to James Bell, to pay her passage,  
h whom she remained during the period her servi-  
is to continue. At its expiration she attired herself  
habit of a man, and with hunting-shirt and moc-  
went into Burden's grant for the purpose of making  
ements and acquiring a title to land. Here she  
thirty cabins, by virtue of which she held one  
d acres adjoining each. When Benjamin Burden,

\* Foye's Sketches of Virginia, edition of 1855.

the younger, came on to make deeds to those who held  
cabin rights, he was astonished to see so many of the name  
of Mulhollin. Investigation led to the discovery of the  
mystery, to the great mirth of the other claimants. She  
resumed her Christian name and familiar dress, and many  
of her respectable descendants still reside within the limits  
of Burden's grant."\*

The counties of Patrick and Rockbridge were settled  
chiefly by Irish at the beginning of the eighteenth century.  
The McDowells, Breckenridges, McDuffies, McGruders,  
were among the first pioneers of the district. In 1750-54,  
we are told that the population of Virginia grew "every  
day" more numerous through the influx of Irish  
emigrants, who took up ground in the remote counties of  
that province as well as in North Carolina and Maryland.  
Jefferson speaks of the Irish who "had gotten possession of  
the valley between the Blue Ridge and the North Mountain  
forming a barrier which none could venture to leap" at  
this period.† Mitchell tells us that the migration of Prot-  
estant dissenters from Ireland, which commenced in Lord  
Carteret's time (1731), afterwards took large proportions,  
and Western Virginia, Pennsylvania, North Carolina and  
Georgia were in a great measure peopled by those emi-  
grants.‡ Among the new arrivals from Ireland at this  
period were Philip Embury or Emory and Barbara Hock,  
who, it is said, "laid the foundation of the Methodist Church  
both in the United States and Canada."§

John Campbell, the great ancestor of the Campbells of  
Holston, came from Ireland to America, with a family of  
five grown sons and several daughters, in the year 1726.  
About the year 1730 he removed to what was then Orange,

\* Historical Collections of Virginia.

† Jefferson, Op. vi., 485.

‡ History of Ireland,

§ Hon. John Kelly, Early Irish Settlers,



[REDACTED]

afterwards Augusta county, where he resided until his death, and where his numerous descendants lived for many years. Patrick had a son Charles, and he a son William, who was the General William Campbell of the Revolution. David, the youngest son of John, married May Hamilton, and had a family of thirteen children, seven sons and six daughters, the youngest of whom was nineteen years old when they removed to Holston. In 1765 John, the oldest son of David Campbell, in company of Dr. Thomas Walker, explored the western wilderness, and purchased for his father and himself an ancient survey, near the headwaters of the Holston.

"The first settlers on the Shenandoah were, like those of Opecquon, from Ireland. John Lewis came from Ireland by way of Portugal, to which he first fled after a bloody encounter with an oppressive landholder, of whom Lewis was lessee. Lewis brought his wife, Mary, with him. He had four sons: three of them, Thomas, Andrew, and William, born in Ireland, and Charles, the child of his old age, born a few months after settlement in their mountain home. Attended by his family and a band of about thirty of his faithful tenantry, he arrived in Virginia, and fixed their residence amid the till then unbroken forests of West Augusta. John Lewis' settlement was a few miles below the site of the town of Staunton, on the banks of the stream which still bears his name. Charles was the hero of many a gallant exploit, which is still treasured in the memories of the descendants of the border riflemen, and there are few families among the Alleghanies where the name and deeds of Charles Lewis are not familiar as household words. Thomas Lewis, though less efficient during the Indian wars than his brethren, was a man of learning and sound judgment, and represented the county of Augusta

of the convention which ratified the Constitution of the United States and formed the Constitution of Virginia afterwards sat for the county of Rockingham in the House of Delegates of Virginia. In 1765 he was in the Burgesses, and voted for Patrick Henry's resolutions. Thomas Lewis had four sons who participated in the war of the Revolution; the youngest, Thomas, bore an ensign's commission when he was fourteen years of age. Andrew Lewis, the second son, was the General Lewis who commanded at the battle of Point Pleasant. William Lewis, the third son, was an active participator in the border wars, an officer of the Revolutionary army, in which one of his sons was killed, and another maimed for life."\*

Among others may be mentioned Col. James Patton, who came from Donegal about 1750 and obtained from the Governor of Virginia a grant of 120,000 acres of land upon which a large number of his countrymen settled.

In the latter part of December, 1743, the inhabitants of the Timber Ridge were assembled at McDowell's house on a road from Staunton to Lexington, to resist or repel the murderous incursions of the Indians from Ohio, who would not yield the valley of the Shenandoah to the whites without their lives. McDowell had rallied his neighbors, who were poorly skilled in savage warfare, the company fell into an ambush, at the junction of the North River and the Shenandoah, and at one fire, McDowell and eight of his company were dead. "The Indians fled precipitately, in consequence of the unusual extent of their murderous attack. The alarmed population gathered in the field of battle, thought more of the dead than of pursuing the survivors, whom they supposed far on their way to the West,

\* Hist. Call. of Virginia.

† Foote's Sketches of



nine bloody corpses on horseback and laid them side by side, near McDowell's dwelling, while they prepared their graves in overwhelming distress. Though mourning the loss of their leading men, and unacquainted with military maneuvers on the frontiers, no one talked of abandoning possessions for which so high a price of blood was given in time of profound peace. In their sadness the women were brave. Burying their dead with the solemnity of Christian rites, while the murderers escaped beyond the mountains, men and women resolved to sow their fields, build their church, and lay their bodies in Timber Ridge. The burial place of these men is to be seen in a brick inclosure on the west side of the road near the Red House, or Maryland Tavern, the residence of McDowell. Entering the iron gate, and inclining to the left, about fifteen paces, there is to be seen a rough, unhewn limestone, about two feet in height, on which, in rude letters by an unknown and unpracticed hand, is the following inscription, next in age to the Irish school-master's wife in the graveyard of Opecquon:\*

HERE LIES THE BODY OF  
JOHN MACKDOWELL,  
Deced. December, 1743.

"Let us pause a few moments at this rough, low, time-worn stone, in the very center of the graves, the first, with an inscription, reared in the valley of Virginia, to mark the resting-place of an emigrant. You will scarcely read the inscription on one side or decipher the letters on the other. The stone crumbled under the unskillful hands of the husband, who brought it from that eminence yonder in the west, and, in the absence of a proper artist, inscribed

\* Foote's Sketches of Virginia.

the letters himself, to be a memorial to his young and lovely wife. Tradition says he was the schoolmaster.

(On one Side.)  
JOHN WILSON  
INTERRED HERE  
THE BODIES OF HIS 2  
CHILDREN & WIFE  
Ye MOTHER MARY MARCUS,  
who Dyed Agst.  
THE 4th 1743,  
Aged 22 years

(On the Other.)  
FROM  
IRLAND  
Ju l y Vith, 1737.  
Coty ARGHA  
S H  
8

"On the side on which Ireland is chiseled, the pebbles in the stone or his unsteady hand made large indentures and rendered the inscription almost illegible. Here the stone has stood, a monument of affection, and marks the grave of the early departed, while the graves of more than a century have passed away."\*

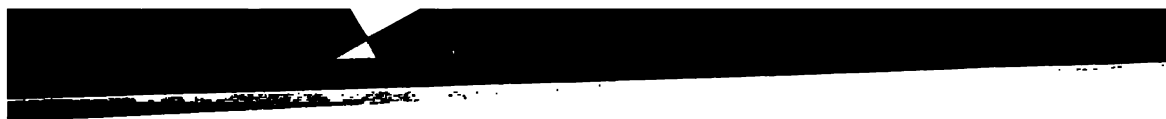
#### THE CAROLINAS AND GEORGIA.

In 1663 Charles II. granted to Lord Clarendon and others the territory lying between the thirty-first and thirty-sixth degrees of north latitude and extending from the Atlantic to the Pacific. Locke devised an elaborate system of government for the infant colony, which, as Spencer says, only "affords a singular proof of how little practical value are theoretical attempts to arrange and regulate satisfactorily the position and claims of the governors and the governed."† It was not difficult to find men willing to become palatines, landgraves, caciques, or barons, as Locke's arrangement contemplated; but intending emigrants did not care to become their serfs or subjects, and so the scheme fell to the ground.

In 1716, the Yemassee Indians attempted to extirpate

\* Foote's Sketches of Virginia.

† History of the U. S., vol. I.



the white settlers, but they were defeated and their lands confiscated. In order to strengthen their frontiers against further attacks, the Assembly offered the vacant lands on the most favorable conditions to those who would occupy them. This induced five hundred Irish families to come over and settle down in the district, but soon after their arrival the proprietaries infamously broke through the arrangement made by the Assembly and deprived these emigrants of their lands. Many of the Irish settlers, it is said, perished, and the rest moved further north. The proprietors were however soon punished for their greed and treachery; the people entered into an association for common defence against them, and selected Col. Moore, the former governor, to take charge of affairs. Finally their charter was declared forfeited and they were obliged to accept £22,000 in lieu of their claims upon the province.\* "In 1737 multitudes of laborers and husbandmen in Ireland, unable to procure a comfortable subsistence for their families in their native land, embarked for Carolina. The first colony of Irish receiving a grant of lands near the Santee river formed a settlement which was called Williamsburgh."† It should be mentioned that Carolina was divided into two distinct governments in 1729, known as North and South Carolina.

"In 1739 the landlords of Ireland, armed with despotic power under acts framed and passed by themselves, rigorously exercised it against their defenceless tenantry and compelled them in thousands to leave their native land and seek an asylum in America. An Irish colony was planted this year in the Carolinas, and extensive tracts of land of assigned it."‡ Spencer says that such numbers left the

\* Spencer, vol. I.

‡ Marmion.

† Ibid.

North of Ireland at this time for the Carolinas that "the depopulation of whole districts was threatened."\*

In 1745 a large number of Irish immigrants settled in North Carolina, "along the Cape Fear and its tributaries and in the fertile domain between the Yadkin and Catawba."† About this period the fathers of Jackson, Calhoun and Pickens settled in the Carolinas, and brought with them that hatred of British despotism which they transmitted undiluted to their sons. Ramsay, the historian of South Carolina says on this subject: "Of all other countries none has furnished the province with so many inhabitants as Ireland. Scarce a ship sailed from any of its ports for Charleston that was not crowded with men women and children."‡

Georgia was the last settled of the thirteen colonies. In 1733 one hundred and sixteen persons, headed by Oglethorpe, began a settlement at Savannah. Into this colony also there came a considerable number of Irish, who did good service afterwards for the cause of American liberty.§

\* Hist. of U. S., vol. I.

† Lossing

‡ History of South Carolina.

§ At the first public meeting of the Sons of Liberty held in Savannah, July 14, 1774, John Glenn was chairman, and amongst those present were S. Farley, J. Bryan, W. Gibbons, J. Wynn, E. Butler and several others bearing Irish names.



## CHAPTER VII.

IMMENSE IRISH IMMIGRATION JUST BEFORE THE REVOLUTION. MULTITUDES OF EVICTED TENANTS COME OVER AND FIGHT FOR AMERICAN LIBERTY.

WHEN George II. saw the flower of his army reel and break before the headlong onset of the Irish Brigade at Fontenoy, he cried out in his despair, "Cursed be the laws which deprived me of such subjects." His ill-starred grandson, the third of the "fools and oppressors" who bore his name, had still greater reason to execrate the infamous system which drove myriads of maddened Irish across the Atlantic, when he learned that Washington had triumphed over his mercenary hordes, and that of the army which followed the patriot chief to final victory, fully one half was composed of those whom British "law," and landlord greed and hate, had deprived of even the humble shelter of a cabin's roof upon the soil of Ireland. The Pennsylvania Line, the Riflemen of Stark and Morgan, and the fierce Maryland troopers who charged with Moylan—all these and tens of thousands besides of America's defenders remembered "British faith" as well as their kindred who a generation before had driven the bloody Cumberland from the hardest fought field of France. The important effects which the British penal laws, and landlord system in Ireland, produced on the destinies of America have not hitherto received adequate consideration. There are however ample grounds for asserting that to those combined evils, the thirteen colonies were indebted for from

a third to a half of their population at the commencement of the Revolution.

Of the Irish half of the Continental army, a large proportion was composed of evicted Irish tenants, who, driven from their homes, especially in 1771 and the two following years, and unsuccessful in their resistance to British "law," fled to America, to escape the prison and the scaffold, and there became the most determined enemies of the tyrannical government which had oppressed and persecuted them. The proofs which can be given of this most important but too frequently ignored fact are numerous and conclusive. Rev. Mr. Gordon, a Protestant clergyman says: "In the government of Lord Townshend a part of Ulster began to be disturbed by an insurrection which, originating from a local cause yet a severe grievance, was much more extensive and of longer duration than that of the 'Hearts of Oak' (an agrarian organization which existed a short time previous). An estate in the County Antrim, a part of the vast possessions of an absentee landlord, the Marquis of Donegal, was proposed, where its leases had expired, to be set only to those who could pay large fines, and the agent of the marquis was said to have exacted extravagant fees on his own account also. Numbers of the former tenants, neither able to pay the fines, nor the rents demanded by those who on payment of fines and fees took leases over them, were dispossessed of their tenements and left without the means of subsistence. Rendered thus desperate they maimed the cattle of those who had taken their lands, committed also other outrages and to express a firmness of resolution styled themselves 'Hearts of Steel.' To rescue one of their number confined on a charge of felony in Belfast, some thousands of peasants, who neither before

\* History of Ireland, vol. II., 257.





nor after took any part in the insurrection, marched with the Steelmen into the town and demanded the prisoner from the military guard, the officers of which were fortunately persuaded by a respectable physician to his liberation in order to prevent the ruinous consequences of a dreadful battle. The association of the Steelmen extended into the neighboring counties, augmented by distressed or discontented peasantry, who were not affected immediately by the original grievance. By the exertions of the military, some were taken and tried at Carrickfergus. As they were acquitted from the supposed partiality of the witnesses and jury an Act of Parliament was passed in March, 1772, ordering their trials to be held in counties different from those in which their offences were committed. Some, in consequence, were carried to Dublin, but were there, from prejudices entertained against a law so unconstitutional, acquitted. In the December of 1773, during the administration of Earl Harcourt, the obnoxious act was repealed. From a sense of the evil consequences of disorders, insurgents tried in their respective counties were now condemned and executed. The insurrection was totally quelled, but its effects were long baneful. So great and wide was the discontent that many thousands emigrated from those parts of Ulster to the American settlements, where they soon appeared in arms against the British Government, and contributed powerfully by their zeal and valor to the separation of the American colonies from the Empire of Great Britain."

Several other writers give a similar account of this "land war," its causes and consequences.\* Marmion, speaking of

\* Taylor says: "The rapacity of the agent of an absentee nobleman, the Marquis of Donegal, produced a fierce agrarian insurrection in the county of Antrim, which soon extended over the greater part of Ulster. The insurgents named themselves *Hearts of Steel*, to show the firmness of their resolution. They determined not to pay the extravagant rents

it, says: "The effects of this agrarian insurrection extended to the adjoining counties (from Antrim) affected the welfare of the province of Ulster instrumental in extending liberty to the whole. Thousands of men, driven from their holdings with the country, and expressing the deepest animosity against the Irish landlords, emigrated to America there at a critical moment and actuated by their patriotism joined the armies of Washington, then contending for independence, and contributed by their numbers and their courage and conduct to separate the United States from the British Crown. The emigration to America during the years 1771, 1772 and 1773, from the province of Ulster, exceeded all former precedent. The emigrants were chiefly farmers and manufacturers who, by converting their property into specie, which they took with them, were calculated to deprive Ulster of one-fourth of its medium, which then consisted altogether of specie

and fines demanded by the landlords and their agents, and the cattle and houses of any tenants who should take the heads." By the exertions of the military, several of the arrested and brought to trial at Carrickfergus; but they were acquitted from the supposed partiality of the witnesses and the justice of the aristocracy, enraged at being disappointed of the expected contributions of their revolted vassals, passed a law, that trials for insurrection should be held in counties different from those in which the offences had been committed. Some of the insurgents were, in consequence, tried in Dublin; but the juries, disgusted at such an unconstitutional proceeding, acquitted the prisoners without conviction. This infamous law was repealed during the administration of Lord Harcourt, and the juries in the disturbed districts were at length induced to do their duty with firmness. After several of the insurgents had been convicted and executed, the disturbances were at an end. An immense number of the Ulster Protestants sought refuge in America. The rapacity of their landlords in the wilds of America."—H. Harpers, New York.



a portion equal thereto of the most valuable part of its population.\* He adds that from Belfast there sailed in the three years named thirty ships filled with emigrants. from Londonderry thirty-six, and from Newry twenty-two, and estimates the number of their passengers at over twenty-five thousand.†

At this period, and in fact for a considerable time before, emigration to America on a corresponding scale took place from the other three provinces of Ireland. This was caused not only by the landlord exactions which had compelled so many of the Protestant population of Ulster to abandon their native land, but also by the privations and persecutions to which the Catholics were subjected through the operation of the Penal laws. The overburdened and exasperated people were driven by the instinct of self-preservation to organize for mutual protection, and the association known as the Whiteboys was formed in 1762 to check evils which had become intolerable.

Writers and speakers of the period sufficiently account for the existence of this organization by the facts which they relate. According to one authority the landlords of Munster "let their lands to cotters far above their value, and, to lighten their burden, allowed commonage to their tenants by way of recompense; afterwards, in despite of all equity, contrary to all compacts, the landlords inclosed these commons and precluded their unhappy tenants from the only means of making their bargains tolerable."‡ Another writer says, "Thrown by law upon the miserable tillers of the soil for support, the majority of the (Anglican) clergy employed a class of men called tithe proctors to collect revenues: and

\* History of the Maritime Ports of Ireland, p. 333. .

† History of the Maritime Ports of Ireland.

‡ McGee, History of Ireland.

never was there a greater scourge inflicted on an unfortunate country. Their exactions, their cruelties, their oppressions would furnish material for volumes; and would even then convey but a faint image of the intolerable misery they occasioned. The Irish law of tithe was far more severe than the English: it armed the parson with greater powers, it took from the farmer every means of defence against illegal overcharges. If the Irish (Anglican) clergy and their proctors had been angels they must have been corrupted by the system: but they were not even the best of men, and they used their tremendous power to its fullest extent. The oppressions of the landlords and the tithe mongers produced their natural effect. The peasants, driven to despair, broke out in agrarian insurrections which soon became formidable. There was not a man in Ireland ignorant of the cause of these disturbances, but the rulers of the land were neither willing to acknowledge their tyranny nor inclined to cease from their rapacity. They adopted the usual favorite remedy of (Anglo-) Irish legislators, and passed a sanguinary code of laws to which no country in Europe can furnish a parallel."\* "Acts were passed," says Arthur Young "for the punishment of the Whiteboys, which seemed calculated for the meridian of Barbary," and which tended "more to raise than to quell an insurrection."† Some members of the corrupt and cruel Anglo-Irish Parliament were found manly enough to protest against those legalized crimes. Lucius O'Brien, member for Clare, denounced them in the Irish House of Commons, and added, "It has been said that to prevent opposition to such demands we should put in force our penal laws against those that have opposed them already, but no penal law, however sanguinary in itself and however rigorously executed, will subdue the

\* Taylor's History of Ireland.

† Tour in Ireland.



natives of a free country into a tame and patient acquiescence in what must appear to be the most flagitious injustice and the most cruel oppression. The insurrections against which we are so eager to carry out the terrors of the law are no more than branches of which the shameful negligence of our clergy and the defects in our institutions are the root.\* Those who endeavored to befriend the people were persecuted and punished with extreme severity. Because of his well-known sympathy with them, Father Nicholas Sheehy was executed on an absurd charge after a mock trial at Clonmel in 1765. Five years later Edmund Burke, the faithful advocate of the rights of America, was accused of having "sent his brother Richard, Recorder of Bristol and a relative, Mr. Nagle, on a mission through Munster, to levy money on the Popish body for the use of the Whiteboys." Burke had in fact started a subscription to defend the members of the organization when on trial, but he was able to baffle the malice of his enemies and escape evil consequences, although others, accused of the same offence, including the Bishop of Cloyne, Right Rev. Dr. McKenna, Robert Keating, and other Catholics, were arrested on account of it.

The Whiteboys spread themselves all over Munster, leveled the hedges and fences of those who had inclosed the commons, dug up the land of greedy graziers who preferred to fatten cattle upon it rather than allow human beings to enjoy its fruits, and performed many other acts which indicated their sentiments more distinctly and emphatically than the most eloquent orators could perhaps have done. But a large force of regular troops was dispatched to the disturbed districts by the Government, under the command of the Marquis of Drogheda, and after considerable effort and much bloodshed and cruelty it succeeded in suppressing the

---

\* Irish Parliamentary Debates.

outbreak. Those who had been engaged in it, and many others, obnoxious to the landlord faction, were forced to flee the country. From Galway, Limerick, Cork, Waterford and Wexford they escaped to America to find shelter and, before long, an opportunity of avenging themselves upon the despotism which had refused to allow them to live in peace in their native land. The Moylans, Barry, and tens of thousands of their countrymen, who left Ireland in these days, had ere long the satisfaction of driving from American soil those who had compelled them to abandon their own. The Presbyterians and other dissenters of Ulster, precluded by the Test Act from aspiring to political or municipal offices, were in this respect almost as harshly dealt with as the Catholics: all suffered alike from the landlord and other exactions already alluded to, and the vast numbers of all creeds who were forced to leave their homes met here upon a common ground and made common cause against the common enemy.

Spencer, speaking of the influx of emigrants here at this time, says, "No complete memorial has been transmitted of the particulars of the emigrations that took place from Europe to America at this period, but (from the few illustrative facts that are actually preserved) they seem to have been amazingly copious. In the years 1771 and 1772, the number of emigrants to America from Ireland alone amounted to seventeen thousand three hundred and fifty. Almost all of them emigrated at their own charge; a great majority of them consisted of persons employed in the linen manufacture, or farmers possessed of some property which they converted into money and carried with them. As most of the emigrants, and particularly those from Ireland and Scotland, were personally discontented with their treatment in Europe, their accession to the colonial population, it might reasonably be supposed, had no tendency to diminish or



counteract the hostile sentiments towards Britain which were daily gathering force in America." \*\*

With all these facts borne in mind the acknowledgment that half the Revolutionary army was Irish—wrung from the reluctant lips of the Tory, Galloway, when examined before the English Parliamentary Committee, ought to excite no surprise.

---

\* Hist. of the U. S., vol. 1

## CHAPTER VIII.

### BRITISH DESPOTISM AROUSES AMERICAN RESENTMENT. "SONS OF LIBERTY."

By the treaty of Paris, signed in 1763, the English gave up the whole of this continent west of the Mississippi, was acknowledged by France. One of the brilliant events of the war then closed was the death of Wolfe—the great grandson of one of the Irish—who defended Limerick against Ireton—won the battle of blood over Montcalm on the Plains of Abraham. The sale expulsion of the Acadians from their homes. The contest showed that the spirit of Cromwell was in England's councils and that her rulers were still as merciless and conscienceless as ever towards those who hated or feared. The result of the struggle was a measure owing to the efforts of the colonists. The colonists displayed the highest bravery and the greatest endurance, aiding the power which was so soon to become a malignant oppressor and enemy. Success was English overbearing and arrogant. Far from being grateful for the assistance given them, they only showed jealousy the growing strength of those from whom they had received it. In order to make the American inferiority it was resolved by the British to station a large body of troops upon them; and to increase English revenues, it was decided that duties should be imposed by the London Parliament upon such commodities imported into the colonies.





ICA.

e against whom  
onstrances only  
nined to persist

the House of  
y-five to forty-  
ouse of Lords.  
y, asked "Will  
are, nourished  
a degree of  
ur arms—will  
re us from the  
ler?" To the  
his argument  
e were a few  
Isaac Barre,  
ey planted by  
planted them  
then uncul-  
they met all  
se they had  
of those who

ey grew by  
to 'care' for  
sons to rule  
out their  
prey upon  
d of those  
omoted to  
o my own  
country to  
justice in

#### THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

79

"They protected by your arms! Those *Sons of Liberty* have nobly taken up arms in your defence \* \* \* and believe me—remember I this day told you so—that same spirit of freedom which actuated that people at first, will accompany them still; but—prudence forbids me to explain myself further." Speaking in a place where the truth was so rarely heard; in the presence and under the power of the unscrupulous and unprincipled enemies of the American people, and of all disposed to be their friends, he refrained from saying all that he felt, and expressing fully his anticipations. But his meaning was well understood even then, and the correctness of his opinions proved before many years had passed away.

On the same night on which he spoke, Franklin, then in London, wrote to his Irish friend, Charles Thomson, of Philadelphia—afterwards Secretary of Congress—"The sun of liberty is set, the Americans must light the lamps of industry and economy." But the sturdy Celt replied "Be assured that we shall light torches of a very different sort," and they did—torches whose flame consumed the rotten fabric of British despotism, and illumined the world with the radiance of freedom.

When the news of the passage of the Stamp Act reached America, the Virginia Assembly was in session, and Patrick Henry, then a member of that body, in moving resolutions denying its validity, said "Cæsar had his Brutus, Charles I. his Cromwell, and George III.—"

"Treason!" shouted the speaker. "Treason," echoed the Tories and Loyalists, but the great orator, rising to a loftier altitude and fixing on the speaker an eye of the most determined fire, finished his sentence with the firmest emphasis\*—"and George III.—may profit by their example!

---

\* Wirt's Life of Patrick Henry.



2000

If this be treason, sir, make the most of it." The resolutions were carried.

What the English are so fond of calling "outrages," when committed by Americans or Irish, promptly followed. The houses of obnoxious officials were attacked and in some cases torn down, their effigies hanged, beheaded, and burned; bells were tolled, mock funeral processions paraded the streets, and the precious stamps, from the sale of which such an increase of England's revenue was expected, were seized and consigned to the flames in many places. Moreover, British goods were boycotted, and British merchants and manufacturers made to feel how unprofitable was their exultation over America's assumed weakness. Associations were formed which adopted the name first applied by the Irish member of Parliament to the American patriots—Sons of Liberty—and which bound themselves "to march with the utmost expedition, at their own cost, and with their whole force, to the relief of those who should be in danger from the Stamp Act, or its promoters, or abettors."

These indications of national spirit produced considerable effect upon the English mind. A change in the British Ministry took place in a short time, and on February 22, 1766, General Conway brought in a bill for the repeal of the Stamp Act. Pitt, who had before strongly advocated its annulment, though he maintained other English pretensions equally absurd,\* aided, and the measure was carried;

\* "Let the Stamp Act," he said, "be repealed absolutely, totally and immediately. At the same time let the sovereign authority of this country over the Colonies be asserted in as strong terms as can be devised, and be made to extend to every point of legislation whatsoever, that we may bind their trade, confine their manufactures and exercise any power whatever except that of taking their money out of their pockets without their consent."—British Parliamentary Debates.

It would appear to be as unjustifiable to "bind their trade and confine their manufactures" as "to take money out of their pockets."

but an English Ministry never knew how to make a concession gracefully, and that in power at the time spoken of, insisted on the previous passage of an act which declared that "Parliament had, and of right ought to have, power to bind the colonies in all cases whatsoever."

The Americans were glad at the repeal of the obnoxious Act, but their satisfaction was short-lived. In the year following (1767) a bill was passed in the British Parliament imposing a duty on tea imported into America as well as on paints, paper, glass and lead. This had the effect of renewing the excitement, which was soon increased by the sending over of two regiments of British troops to Boston, and by a subsequent address to George III. from the English Lords and Commons, praying that he would order the Governor of Massachusetts to send to England for trial all who might be guilty of treason.

The presence and conduct of the British soldiers in Boston created disgust and irritation, and on March 5, 1770, a collision occurred between a body of those mercenaries—the 29th regulars—and a number of citizens, which resulted in the killing of five of the latter by their enemies. One at least of the murdered men was an Irishman named Patrick Carr. That there were many of his countrymen among the crowd who on the occasion referred to shouted, "Down with the bloody backs" was well known. John Adams, who defended the soldiers when brought to trial for their attack on the people, said in his address on their behalf, that the "mob" was in part made up of "Irish Teagues." This outrage, known as the "Boston massacre," still further exasperated the colonists against the British and made a deep impression throughout the entire country.

About this time the people of North Carolina, harassed by exorbitant taxes, and the exaction of greedy British officials, were engaged in a struggle with the latter for



#### THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

their rights. In 1767, an association known as "The Regulators," or "Sons of Liberty," had been formed, to obtain the removal of abuses. This body becoming very powerful and making its influence felt in various ways, the Governor, Tryon, treacherously arrested some of its leading members, and ordered the organization to be disbanded. The severe punishment, however, inflicted after a mock trial on those who were seized, excited such indignation in the public mind that the British official, in order to appease it, felt compelled to issue a proclamation, granting a general pardon to all the Regulators, except thirteen. Among those "outlaws" were John O'Neill, Malachi Tyke, and several others, whose names indicate their Irish origin. William Butler and Samuel Divinny are mentioned as leaders of the organization in 1770, and as endeavoring to secure a fair trial for some of their fellow members, who had been arrested. The Governor, however, determined to crush the Regulators, and for this purpose he assembled at Newbern, early in 1771, a large body of militia, with which and several pieces of artillery he moved towards the Allamance river, where the "malcontents" were encamped. In the conflict which ensued the latter were defeated, mainly in consequence of the fall of their principal leader, Captain Montgomery, a brave young Irish American who commanded a company of "Mountain Boys" and who was killed early in the engagement by a discharge from the British artillery. The proportion of Irish among the Regulators was very considerable. Their most trusted adviser and friend was the Rev. David Caldwell, an Irish Presbyterian clergyman, and a relative of Samuel Caldwell of Philadelphia, one of the original members of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick of that city. This minister had great influence over the people of his congregation and those living in the district. He sympathized with their struggles against oppression,

#### THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

but being aware of their unprepared condition had hasten to the scene of conflict, and riding between the two host bodies, urged his own people to go home quietly. He then went to the British Governor, and obtained from him a pledge that he would abstain from bloodshed, but this notwithstanding, that official ordered his troops to fire upon the people, and when the contest was over caused many of them who had been taken prisoners to be executed. He afterwards traversed the adjacent country, burning houses, destroying crops, and compelling the inhabitants to take the oath of allegiance to the English king.

Some writers speak of this fight on the Allamance as "the first battle of our war for independence,"\* but this is claiming too much for it. Lossing himself, whose words have been just quoted, says that the resistance of the Regulators, "arose from oppressions more personal and real than those which aroused the people of New England. It was not wholly the abstract idea of freedom for which they contended, their strife consisted of efforts to rid themselves of actual burdens. \* \* \* While the Regulators' movement planted deep the seeds of resistance to tyranny, the result of the battle on the Allamance was disastrous in its subsequent effects. The people from whom Tryon wrung an oath of allegiance were conscientious, and held a vow in deep reverence. Nothing could make them swerve from the line of duty; and when the hostilities of the Revolution fully commenced, hundreds whose sympathies were with the patriots felt bound by that oath to remain passive."† A little further on, when speaking of events which occurred three years later, this historian tells us that Governor Martin—Tryon's successor—in his efforts to secure allies in the struggle against the people, "dispatched messengers

\* Lossing.

†Field Book of the Revolution, vol. II., 372.

[REDACTED]

.

.

.

.

.

to the Highlanders at Cross Creek, upon whose loyalty he relied; and others were sent into the more westerly districts to promise the Regulators exemption from the punishments to which they were still liable for past misdeeds if they would assist the king's government against its opposers. These promises had great effect, and, strange as it may seem, many of the Regulators were active Loyalists."\*

It will be evident that the acts of the Regulators were not looked upon by the British officials in the same light as those of the "rebels." The first named resisted extortion and spoliation like the Irish farmers, Scotch crofters, and Welsh dissenters of the present day; but this movement did not, necessarily, involve an attempt to overthrow the British government, and to establish an independent Republic.

This subject is dwelt on here because some writers have affected to regard the conflict on the Allamance as the first blow for Independence; with a view to eclipsing the exploit of Sullivan at Fort William and Mary, near Portsmouth, N. H., in December, 1774, which is justly entitled to the distinction of being considered as such, according to the opinion of the highest authorities,† and which is therefore recalled with peculiar and pardonable pride by men of the race from which the hero of the achievement sprang. But were it otherwise, Irish Americans could still feel proud that the "principal leader"‡ of the Regulators at the battle of the Allamance was one of their own blood—Captain Montgomery—whose fall, like that of his heroic namesake at Quebec, was the main cause why his followers failed to win a victory on the occasion.

---

\* Field Book of the Revolution, vol. II., 374.

† Appleton's Cyclopedia. Peabody's Life of Gen. Sullivan.

‡ Loring.





## CHAPTER IX.

### IRELAND'S SYMPATHY WITH AMERICA.

It may not be considered improper to refer here to the sympathy manifested in Ireland for the American patriots at the period of the Revolution. Franklin, writing from London to Samuel Cooper in April, 1769, affirms, "All Ireland is strongly in favor of the American cause. They have reason to sympathize with us. I send you four pamphlets written in Ireland, or by Irish gentlemen here, in which you will find some excellent well-said things."\*

Three years later he visited Ireland, accompanied by an English member of Parliament named Jackson and was most warmly received. In a letter to William Franklin he says: "At Dublin we saw and were entertained by both parties, the courtiers and the patriots. The latter treated me with particular respect. We were admitted to sit among the members of the Commons House: Mr. Jackson as member of the British Parliament and I as member of some Parliament in America. The speaker proposed it in my behalf, and some very obliging expressions of respect for my character and was answered by the House with a unanimous consent, when two members came out to me, led me between them and placed me honorably and commodiously. I hope our assemblies will not fall short of them in politeness if any Irish member should happen to be in

*Life of Franklin, written by himself, edited by Bigelow.*

### THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA

our country."\* As it was a standing rule of the House to admit members of the English Parliament to take part in the course not to vote among its members, the privilege was granted to his fellow traveler was nothing unusual, and shown him was exceptional, and proved a desire of the Irish Parliament to manifest its feeling for the country, no less than its regard for himself. For that the courtesy extended to him in Dublin subsequently procured here, was fulfilled when Mr. Parnell visited this country a few years since, and was honored with the privilege of addressing the House of Representatives while

\* *Life of Franklin.*

† Extract from Congressional Record of Jan. 15, 1880.

"Speaker Randall laid before the House the following:—

"WASHINGTON, D. C., Jan. 15, 1880.

"MR. SPEAKER—The undersigned, on behalf of the Clan-na-na-na Association, present their compliments, and have the honor, through the courtesy of the Speaker, to respectfully solicit the illustrious body over whom you preside to confer upon the undersigned and the Irish organization they represent the distinguished honor of accepting of an invitation to be present at the delivery of an address on the progress of the Irish race in America by Charles Stewart Parnell on the 2d of February next, and in such place in Washington as will best suit the convenience of the honorable House of Representatives.

"The lively sympathy with the suffering people of Ireland so cordially manifested by the House of Representatives, and the deep seated love of justice which inspires their deliberations, encourage the undersigned to entertain the hope that the occasion referred to will be honored by the presence of the House.

"We have the honor to remain, most respectfully, your obedient servants,

"ED. O'MEAGHER CO.

"RICARD O'S. BURKE

"Committee on Inv

"To the Hon. Samuel J. Randall,

"Speaker of the House of Representatives.

"Ex-Gov. Thos. L. Young of Ohio immediately followed the



Elsewhere he says of "the principal patriots:" "I found them disposed to be friends of America, in which I endeavored to confirm them, with the expectation that our growing weight might in time be thrown into their scale. \* \* \* There are many brave spirits among them."

What a contrast is there between the respect shown to the great American philosopher and patriot by the Irish Parliament and the indignity with which he was treated when before the English Privy Council? In presence of the latter body, Wedderburne, the solicitor-general, accused him of becoming improperly possessed of private letters belonging to others, and said:\* "Nothing will acquit Dr. Franklin of

of the above by submitting this resolution, which was read, considered and agreed to.

"Resolved by the House of Representatives, That the invitation extended to this body to hear the address of Hon. Mr. Parnell, to be delivered in this city on the evening of February 2, on the distressed condition of Ireland, be accepted.

"Mr. Cox, of New York, then said—I propose the following resolution, to follow that of the gentleman from Ohio:

"The clerk read as follows:—

"In response to the invitation just presented and accepted, requesting the House to agree to take part in the ceremonies to be observed in the reception of Mr. Charles Stewart Parnell, a representative of the Irish people, for the delivery of an address on Irish affairs, and because of the great interest which the people of the United States take in the condition of Ireland, with which this country is so closely allied by many historic and kindred ties: Therefore,

"Be it resolved, That the Hall of this House be granted for the above purposes on the 2d day of February next, and that the House meet on that day and time to take part in said ceremonies."

After some discussion this resolution was also adopted, and, in compliance therewith, C. S. Parnell addressed the House while in session on the evening of February 2d. The speaker called the House to order and introduced Mr. Parnell, at the conclusion of whose speech the body adjourned on motion of M. P. O'Connor of South Carolina.

\* Life of Franklin, vol. ii., 102.

the charge of obtaining them by fraudulent or corrupt means for the most malignant of purposes: unless he stole them from the person who stole them. I hope, my lords, you will mark and brand the man for the honor of this country, of Europe, and of mankind. \* \* \* Into what companies will he hereafter go with an unembarrassed face, or the honest intrepidity of virtue. Men will watch him with a jealous eye: they will hide their papers from him and lock up their escritaires. He will henceforth esteem it a libel to be called a man of letters—*homo trium literarum*.\* And for this cowardly and disgusting conduct Wedderburne was made a peer. We are told, too, that "At the sallies of his sarcastic wit all the members of the council, the president himself (Lord Gower) not excepted, frequently laughed outright."†

That the American patriots recognized and appreciated the kindly feeling of Ireland towards them and their cause is clearly shown by the address of the Continental Congress of 1775 to the Irish people, which speaks as follows:—

"ADDRESS OF CONGRESS TO THE PEOPLE OF IRELAND.

"PHILADELPHIA, May 10, 1775.

"Friends and Fellow-subjects. As the important contest into which we have been driven has now become interesting to every European State, and particularly affects the members of the British Empire, we feel it our duty address you on the subject. We are desirous (as is natural to injured innocence) of possessing the good opinion of the virtuous and humane. *We are peculiarly desirous of furnishing you with a true state of our motives and objects*, the better to enable you to judge of our conduct with accuracy, and deter-

\* A man of three letters—"fur," a thief.

† Life of Franklin, vol. ii., p. 205.



mine the merits on the controversy with impartiality and precision.

"Attempts have been made under cover of Parliamentary authority to seize Americans and carry them to Britain to be tried for offences committed in the colonies. Ancient charters have no longer remained sacred—that of Massachusetts Bay was violated, and their form of government essentially mutilated and transformed. On pretence of punishing a violation of some private property, committed by some few individuals, the populous and flourishing town of Boston was surrounded by fleets and armies, its trade destroyed, its port blocked up, and 30,000 citizens subjected to all the miseries attending so sudden a convulsion in their commercial metropolis. And to remove every obstacle to the rigorous execution of this system of oppression an Act of Parliament was passed calculated to indemnify those who might, in the prosecution of it, imbrue their hands in the blood of the inhabitants.

"A Congress consisting of Deputies from twelve United Colonies assembled. They, in the most respectful terms solicited a redress of their grievances. They also agreed to suspend all trade with Britain, Ireland and the West Indies, hoping by this peaceful mode of opposition to obtain that justice from the British Ministry which had been so long sought in vain. And here permit us to assure you that it was with the utmost reluctance that we could prevail upon ourselves to cease our commercial connection with your island.

"Your Parliament had done us no wrong. YOU HAD EVER BEEN FRIENDLY TO THE RIGHTS OF MANKIND, and we acknowledge with pleasure and gratitude that THE IRISH NATION HAS PRODUCED PATRIOTS WHO HAVE NOBLY DISTINGUISHED THEMSELVES IN THE CAUSE OF HUMANITY AND AMERICA. On the other hand, we were not ignorant that

the labors and manufactures of Ireland, like those of the silk-worm, were of little moment to herself, *but served only to give luxury to those who neither toil nor spin.*

"We perceived that if we continued our commerce with you our agreement not to import from Britain would be fruitless, and we were therefore compelled to adopt a measure to which nothing but absolute necessity would have ever reconciled us. It gave us, however, some consolation to reflect that, should it occasion much distress, the fertile regions of America would afford you a safe asylum from poverty and in time from oppression also—an asylum in which many thousands of your countrymen have found hospitality, peace and affluence, and become united with others by all the ties of consanguinity, mutual interest and affection.

"The more fully to evince their respect for authority, the unhappy people of Boston were requested by Congress to submit with patience to their fate, and all Americans united in a resolution to abstain from every species of violence. During this period that devoted town suffered unspeakably, and its inhabitants were insulted and their property violated. Still relying on the justice of the English king and nation they permitted a few regiments to take possession of their town, to surround it with fortifications, and to cut off intercourse between them and their friends in the country.

"With anxious expectation did all America wait the event of her appeal for justice. All America laments its fate. Their ruler was deaf to their complaints, and vain were all attempts to impress him with a sense of the sufferings of his American subjects: of the cruelty of their taskmasters and of the many plagues which impended over his dominions. Instead of directions for a candid inquiry into our grievance, insult was added to oppression and our long forbearance was rewarded with the imputation of cowardice. Our



trade with foreign States was prohibited, and an Act of Parliament passed to prevent us from fishing even on our own shores. Our peaceable assemblies, for the purpose of consulting with respect to the common safety, were declared seditious; and our assertion of the very rights which placed the crown of Britain on the heads of three successive princes of the house of Hanover, styled rebellion. Orders were given to reinforce the troops in America. The wild and barbarous savages of the wilderness were solicited by gifts to take up the hatchet against us, and instigated to deluge our settlements with the blood of innocent and defenceless women and children. The whole country was moreover alarmed with the horrors of domestic insurrection—refinements of cruelty, at which the people of Britain must blush; refinements which admit not of being even recited without horror, or practiced without infamy. We should be happy were these dark machinations the mere suggestions of suspicion. We are sorry to declare that we are possessed of the most authentic and indubitable evidences of their reality.

\* \* \* \* \*

“Despairing of driving the colonists to resistance by any other means than actual hostility, a detachment of the army at Boston marched into the country in all the array of war and, unprovoked, fired upon and killed several of the inhabitants. The neighboring farmers suddenly assembled and repelled this attack. From this time all communication between town and country was interrupted. The citizens petitioned the general for permission to leave the town, and he promised, on surrendering their arms, to permit them to depart, with their other effects. They accordingly surrendered their arms, and the general violated his faith. Under and denied, a

many thousands are at this day confined in the utmost wretchedness and want. The lame, the sick have indeed been turned out into the fields, and some, eluding the vigilance of the soldiers, escaped from the town by swimming to the adjacent islands.

“The war having been thus begun on the part of Gage’s troops, we are compelled to behold our countrymen imprisoned, and men women involved in promiscuous and unmerited misery find all faith at an end, and sacred treaties turned of state; when we perceive our friends and kindred, our habitations plundered, our houses in the hands of their once happy inhabitants fed only by the hands of the enemy who can blame us for endeavoring to restrain the rage of desolation? Who can censure our repelling such a barbarous band? Who in such circumstances not obey the great, the universal, the divine law of preservation? Though vilified as wretched and degraded; though insulted and despised; though wished for reconciliation; though defamed as traitors, we were ready to obey the laws.

“But we forbear to trouble you with a tedious enumeration of various and fruitless offers and applications we have made, not for pensions, for wealth, or for the humble boon of being permitted to possess the degree of liberty to which God and the Constitution have given us an undoubted right.

“Blessed with an indissoluble Union, with a firm reliance on the eternal resources, and with a firm reliance on the Supreme Disposer of all human affairs, we doubt of rising superior to all the machinations of abandoned ministers. We already anticipate a period when Liberty, with all the gentle arts of humanity, shall establish her mild dominion in





World, and erect eternal monuments to the memory of those virtuous patriots and martyrs who shall have fought, bled and served in her cause.

"Accept our most grateful acknowledgments for the friendly disposition you have *always* shown towards us. We know that *you* are not without your grievances. We sympathize with you in your distress, and are pleased to find that the design of subjugating us has persuaded the Administration to dispense to Ireland some vagrant rays of ministerial sunshine. Even the tender mercies of [the British] Government have long been cruel towards you. In the rich pastures of Ireland many hungry parasites have fed and grown strong to labor for its destruction. We hope the patient abiding of the meek may not always be forgotten, and God grant that the iniquitous schemes of extirpating liberty may soon be defeated. But we should be wanting to ourselves, and should be perfidious to posterity, should we submit with folded arms to military butchery and deprivations, to ratify the lordly ambition or sate the avarice of a British ministry. In defence of our persons and properties, under actual violation, we have taken up arms. When that violence shall be removed, and hostilities cease on the part of the aggressors, they shall cease on our part also.

"For the achievement of this happy event we confide in the good offices of our sympathizers beyond the Atlantic. Of their friendly dispositions we do not yet despair, aware as they must be, that they have nothing more to expect from the same common enemy, than the humble favor of being last devoured." \*

This appeal intensified the sympathy of those to whom it was addressed for their friends and kindred beyond the Atlantic who were struggling for liberty. "Meetings were

\* Journal of Congress of 1775.

held in many parts of Ireland to cheer the A. Soon after the debates in Parliament "went very of formally justifying the American Revolution writers have indeed sought to create a different but in their endeavor to do so, they have strangely presented or perhaps misapprehended the real significance of the incident upon which they relied to support it. It may be as well to set at rest here any doubts that have arisen on this question. Lossing says: "The king wrote an autograph letter to the States of Holland, soliciting them to dispose of their Ships for service against the Americans. The request was refused. A message was sent to the Parliament requesting a supply of troops; that body complied and sent four thousand men, for the American service. The king agreed to send men to butcher their brethren and to pay for a consideration; while the noble Hollanders of rebuke dissented, and refused to allow their subjects to fight the strugglers for freedom, though strange blood and language."† It is hard to conceive of a man of ability and research could consider himself justified in speaking in this manner. His words are calculated to mislead. The inference to be drawn from them is that the legislative bodies, each equally at liberty to grant or refuse the proffered request of the English king, one body complied while the other basely yielded assent so for a "consideration." It is not questioned that the Hollanders have often displayed a love of liberty and a sense of honor. At the same time it should be remembered that they went, under William of Orange, "to fight the strugglers for freedom" in Ireland, who merely wished

\* Mooney's History of Ireland, p. 831.

† Mitchel's History of Ireland, 118.

‡ Field Book of the Revolution, vol. i., 588.

[REDACTED]

the same right which they and the English claimed for themselves—that of choosing their own ruler. The existence, moreover, to-day of Belgium as an independent State, and the remembrance of the struggles through which her people won their freedom, serve to show that the House of Orange can oppress and provoke resistance as well as the House of Brunswick, and that the Hollanders have not always hesitated to fight against even "their brethren and kinsmen" on behalf of tyranny. Holland was a free nation. The English king had no more right to demand troops from it in order to suppress revolt in the Colonies than had the President of the United States to ask England for soldiers to assist in subduing the Confederates during our late troubles. The Hollanders did well in refusing the request of George III., but they could not have done otherwise without lowering themselves to the level of the petty despots who sold their unfortunate subjects like slaves to fight for the enslavement of the Americans.

With the Irish the case was altogether different. They were not free, nor had they a Representative body to even voice their sentiments. Ireland was, like America, subject to England. The so-called Irish Parliament did not at all represent the Irish people, more than five-sixths of whom—being Catholics—were ineligible to a seat in it and even prohibited from casting a vote at the election of its members. Half the remaining sixth, the Presbyterians, Methodists and other "dissenters" from the Anglican Church were, by the operation of the Test Act, almost as much excluded from political privileges, power, or position—including the right to sit in the Legislature—as the adherents of the Ancient Faith. The alleged Parliament of Ireland did not, however, represent even the small fraction of the population still unaccounted for. Over three-fourths of its members were practically appointed by the

English Lord Lieutenant and about a score of peers, and less than a fourth owed their seats of the skeleton constituencies, to whom was reserved the election franchise. Barrington says: "The Lord Lieutenant nominated nine members to the House of Commons, the Earl of Shannon nominated seven, and above twenty members of the House of Lords nominated twenty members for the House of Commons. Many openly sold their patronage for money to the Lord Lieutenant, others returned members at the nomination of the Lord Lieutenant or his secretary: and it appeared that the number of representatives elected freely by the people upon democratic principles did not compose one-fourth of the members of the Commons."\* There is still more to be added. "The Law of Poynings" passed in the Irish Parliament in the reign of the English king Henry VII., that by which itself of the right to originate any bill whatever, and any statute could be finally discussed, it was presented to the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland and his Council for their consideration, who might, at their pleasure, reject it or transmit it to England. If the latter was adopted, the British Attorney-General and Privy Council were invested with power, either to suppress it or to amend it at their own will, and then return it to the Lord Lieutenant with *permission* to the Irish Parliament to pass it into law without any alteration, though it frequently returned to England so changed as to retain hardly a trace of its original features or a point of its original object."† in the sixth year following the accession of George III. to the British throne, the English Parliament passed an Act which it assumed the power "to bind Ireland

\* Rise and Fall of the Irish Nation.

† Ibid.



British statute in which she should be expressly designated."\*

It must now be evident that the mass of the Irish people cannot in any way be held responsible for the acts of their pretended Parliament, composed of the elements and controlled by the authority and influences just indicated. It had no sympathy with those whom it affected to represent and for whom it assumed to speak. By its penal enactments, its wanton and offensive exclusiveness, and its abject subservience to England, it earned the hatred of the people, and was forced to provide for the support of an army to keep them in subjection. When in 1775 it was asked, more as a matter of form than of necessity, to signify its consent to the transfer to America, in order to sustain English supremacy and strengthen the loyalists—of four thousand of these troops, for whose maintenance it taxed the Irish people, the request was complied with. Not, however, without vigorous opposition and strong expressions of sympathy with the American patriots, from those who did not owe their positions to the favor of British officials.

When the matter was first hinted at in the royal address at the opening of Parliament, Yelverton justified the action of the Americans, and said that "No slavery could be more perfect than where men were taxed without being represented. The Ministry had cut off the rights of thirteen colonies at once. Ireland would be the next victim. When liberty had but one neck, that too would be lopped off at one stroke."

Hatch asserted that the dispute was not between Ireland and the Colonies but between them and Britain. "If the resistance of the Americans, to those who would take their

liberties from them, were deemed rebellion, all he would be rebels."

Wilson solemnly declared "that no reward the he give, would be able to satisfy his conscience if he the measure."

Hussey Burgh was opposed to taxing the without their consent, and "would not vote for sword" against them. "Gentlemen," he said, "m against taxing Ireland also, but should thirty English swords enforce that doctrine, eloquence w weak defence against them." Bushe was oppos project, for he felt that if "they agreed to it the would be to tax Ireland in the British House of C

Daly, in speaking against the scheme, affirmed English "might well permit Ireland to have a F while its members made themselves tools to fleece lic."

Ponsonby said: "If troops are sent abroad without sent we are not made parties to the quarrel. I consent we take part against America, but to do t be unjust." Newenham expressed the belief that America might be conquered, the spirit of libe could never be subdued."

Ogle boldly declared that "they would not be in by threats. They would not send men to cut th of the Americans. While the Irish Parliament w that was absurd they would, no doubt, have a F just as the Romans had a Senate in the times o perors; to give sanction to Imperial edicts. If be sent to America let them send foreign merc The elder Fitzgibbon, Connolly, and others, also opposed the proposition;\* but the nominees of th

\* Irish Parliamentary Reports.

[REDACTED]

and his allies were too strong, and they carried their point, with the concession, however, that Ireland was not be called on to pay or support those "armed negotiators" while engaged, along with twenty-five thousand armed American Tories\*—in an effort to prevent the Colonies from separating from Britain. It may be stated here—in order to show how merely formal was the request made by the British Minister, to the so-called Irish Parliament for its consent to the departure of the troops alluded to—that Lord North, although he had only asked for four thousand of the men stationed in Ireland, sent orders to embark eight of the regiments there, which made up much more than the number requested. When he offered to replace the troops sent away by an equal number of Hessians, to be maintained at the expense of England alone, his proposition was promptly declined. This was the only return proffered for the compliance of the Irish Parliament with the request of the British Ministry, so that Lossing's assertion that the former consented to the latter's wishes, "for a consideration," is as groundless as his comparison of the course pursued by a subject body with that of an independent one is unfair.

Froude speaks of what he calls a "petition of the Catholics in Ireland" in 1775; the signers of which assert that they regard with "abhorrence" the "unnatural rebellion" in America; that their loyalty "is, and always was, as the dial to the sun true though not shone upon," and that they know "these sentiments to be those also of their fellow Roman Catholic subjects." This precious paper is signed by Lords Fingal, Trimleston and a few others. It is addressed to the Secretary of the Lord Lieutenant, who is asked to represent the views contained in it to his superior officer, and to request the latter, if he think proper, to lay

them before the English king.\* There were a few Tories among the old Catholic aristocracy who were as anxious as those of the same stripe to show their loyalty to George III. But this paper, as it pretended to represent the sentiments of the Irish Catholics, was much further from the truth. The address of the American Tories to the king in which he declared that "quite as many if not more Americans joined his armies as had fought against him,"† argument in the case, however, as in almost all others futes itself. Speaking of the Catholic Irish at the time he says: "The friends of the Americans in Ireland, their worst foes, who but for England would have put laws in force against them,"‡ which is equivalent to saying that Grattan and his patriotic colleagues were to enforce the penal laws.§ Comment is needless.

\* English in Ireland. At the time of the "veto" agitation (1808-14) when the people indignantly protested against the rulers of England a negative upon the appointment of Catholics, Lord Fingal tried to get up a petition in favor of the scheme. It received four signatures, all like himself lords. So much influence and for the weight to be attached to what he might call a petition of which Froude speaks was equally valueless.

† Sabine.

‡ English in Ireland, vol. ii., p. 174.

§ Grattan, during a debate, which occurred a few years later, was severely and justly scored for his conduct in consenting to the transfer of troops from Ireland to America in 1775. Affecting—in order to appear against Parliamentary courtesy—to speak of an imaginary petition, he said: "With regard to the liberties of America, which were not from ours, I will suppose this gentleman to have been an enemy and unreserved: and that he voted against her liberty and, moreover, for an address to send four thousand troops to cut the throats of the Americans that he called those butchers' armed negotiators with a metaphor in his mouth and a bribe in his pocket."



[REDACTED]

It may not be out of place here to allude to some evidences of the feeling of indignation with which the Irish people regarded the sending of troops to America. When the regiments required for the odious service were designated, Lord Effingham, who held a commission in one of them, sent his resignation to the English Secretary of War, and frankly stated his reasons for taking this step. To manifest its appreciation of his patriotism, the City of Dublin, at the ensuing midsummer quarter assembly, voted him its thanks and eulogized him for having "refused to draw his sword against the lives and liberties of his fellow-subjects in America." Soon after, the Guild of Merchants of the Irish Capital presented an address of thanks to the peers who had voted against the measure, and "in opposition to a weak and wicked administration protested against the American Restraining Bills."\* This address and the replies of the lords to whom it had been presented, open declarations of sympathy with America, were at once published in the journals throughout the country, and produced a profound impression, even in England.

Froude speaks of the Catholic gentry and clergy of Ireland coming forward with an offer of a subscription in aid of the British government during its contest with America. He bases his assertion on the alleged petition to the Secretary of the Lord Lieutenant, before referred to, but as that only speaks of an intention never carried out "to raise a fund for encouraging recruits for H. M.'s service," on the part of the few insignificant and uninfluential individuals who signed it; and as the paper itself, moreover, was not thought worthy of a reply by those to whom it was addressed, and was never even made public until the

against the rights of America, the only hope of Ireland and the only refuge of the liberties of mankind."—Select Speeches of Grattan, p. 104.

\* Mitchell's History of Ireland, 118.

author of the historical romance called the "Fitzpatrick of Ireland" saw fit to set it forth, the charge is deemed deserving of serious notice.

The subjects above referred to may not, at first seem to require consideration in these pages. But it is remembered that they are spoken of, and so misrepresented by, writers of American history, it appears improper to have attempted here briefly the removal of erroneous impressions with regard to them. The removal of prejudices which those impressions are deemed to excite among those who have not heard both sides of the question at issue.

The Irish people were, with exceptions far fewer than were to be found in America itself, enthusiastic of American liberty. In Britain the case was quite different. "In England," says Spencer, "there was a general sentiment in favor of compelling the colonists to obedience."\* Chatham said, in the English House of Commons, 1775: "There is scarcely a man in our streets, so poor as scarcely to be able to get his daily bread, but who is the legislator of America. '*Our American*' is a common phrase in the mouths of the lowest order of citizens."†

Taylor says: "The war for the subjugation of the colonies was at first decidedly popular in England. The habit of using the phrase '*our colonies*,' there was an English peasant who did not regard the colonists as enemies against himself, and as enemies to some fancied rights and power which he deemed the privilege of every man by his birth-right."‡ Addresses and petition

\* History of the U. S., vol. i., 328.

† Chatham's Speeches.

‡ History of Ireland vol. ii., 238.



ing with loyalty to the king and indignation against the rebels," from London and the provincial towns, were poured in upon "his majesty" and his advisers. The House of Lords was like "a seething caldron of impotent rage," and the cry of "*Delenda est Carthago*" was raised in the House of Commons when the news of the Boston "Tea Party" reached that body. In Scotland the feeling towards America was not much less heated, and the manner in which it was manifested excited the strong indignation of the American patriots and especially of Jefferson and Franklin.\* On the other hand, the sympathy felt by the people of Ireland for their trans-Atlantic brethren was so strong that when a regiment was ordered from there to fight for British despotism in America, "every man in it had to be shipped on board tied and bound;"† and, hope-

\* In the original draft of the Declaration of Independence Jefferson denounces, in the clause beginning with the words "Nor have we been wanting in attention to our British brethren"—those who permit the sending over of "Scotch and foreign mercenaries to invade and destroy" the people. The word *Scotch* was struck out at the request of Dr. Witherspoon, of New Jersey, one of the Signers, a native of Scotland.—Lossing, ii., 74.

Franklin, in a letter to Hartley, speaking of the American prisoners of war in England, says that a subscription raised there for the purpose of affording them some relief, would "have an excellent effect in favor of Englishmen," and adds, "The Scotch subscriptions for raising troops to destroy us, though amounting to much greater sums, will not do their nation half so much good."—Life of Franklin, vol. ii.

The active part taken also by large numbers of Scotch here, against the patriots, no doubt excited considerable indignation towards them. But it must not be forgotten that two of the Signers, Witherspoon and Wilson, were Scotchmen, and that Mercer, Stirling, and others of that nationality, proved themselves worthy descendants of those who had,

less of help from that quarter, the British got turned to the petty princelings of Hesse Cassel, Brunswick and Waldeck, and purchased from the teen thousand troops for its hateful service, while Furope looked on with indignation, and Frederic denounced "the scandalous man-traffic of his neig

\* Lossing, vol. ii., 347.



.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

AMERICA.

CAPTURE OF FORT  
MID CONCORD—FIRST  
BATTLE AT MACHIAS.

which met at Phila-  
delphia, after a session of  
deliberation, returned home im-  
pressed with the necessity of  
aid would recognize  
the necessity of being  
compelled by force.  
time in endeavor-  
ing to be at hand.  
The representatives  
of the State, and  
on the 11th, 1774, along  
with the N. H., surprised  
the prisoners of the  
British military stores  
in the barrels of gun-  
powder, a considerable supply  
of powder, a valuable  
treasure, fought on  
the 11th, justly, by the  
aid of the colon-

great moment;  
consider the  
fact, which could  
not be committed by

THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

107

a military force against the Royal Government. It was consummated by the seizure of the king's property, and the disarming and imprisoning of his soldiers; and this, too, at a time when the universal language held in public was that of peace, and anticipated reconciliation: and, if the course of events had been otherwise than it was, it is difficult to see how those concerned in it could have screened themselves from the penalties of treason. It was not until four months afterwards that the first blood was shed at Lexington; and later still that an enterprise, in character not dissimilar, was executed, under the command of Patrick Henry, in Virginia."\*

The same view is taken of this enterprise in *Appleton's Cyclopaedia*, and by various other authorities.

Some writers, however, speak of the conflict at Alamance Creek, N. C., before alluded to, which took place in May, 1771, as the "first battle of the war for independence." But that affair had no direct connection with the Revolution. Its influence did not reach, much less enter into, the War of Independence. It had simply a local effect. Alamance Creek had even less to do with the Revolution than did the "Boston Massacre," which occurred on March 5, 1770. These events, like the Boston "Tea Party," were isolated actions, which the American historian should note, not as the beginning of the war, but as tokens of ill-feeling that had existed in the colonies anterior to the war. The country slept for years after these local storms. But Sullivan's exploit was quite different in its character. His surprise of Fort William and Mary was a premeditated thing. It was undertaken by a man who had the war in sight, and who was determined to hasten and urge it on. It was a purely military enterprise. The cannon and other war ma-

\* Life of General Sullivan in Sparks Library of American Biography.



rial captured at that fort did first service at Bunker Hill. He hero of the affair became a major-general in the Revolutionary army. His act entered into and influenced the war of Independence. It was the first link in the chain. It was, in fact, the first blow in the War of Independence.\*

John Sullivan was born in Berwick, Maine, on the 17th of February, 1723. His father came to America about the year 1723, from Kerry, or, some say, Limerick, Ireland, and lived to see his two sons—James, the son of Massachusetts, and John, become distinguished among their countrymen; dying at the patriarchal age of one hundred and

The earlier years of General Sullivan were passed in laborious work on his father's farm; but on arriving at manhood he applied himself to study of law, and after a time opened an office for its practice in the town of Durham, New Hampshire. When the first Continental Congress assembled, he was chosen a delegate to that body; and after his resignation, as stated above, projected and carried out successfully the capture of William and Mary.

In the organization of the Continental army, in 1775, Sullivan was named one of its eight brigadier-generals, and in the year following, as general. He superseded Arnold in command of the American army in Canada in 1776. When General Greene fell sick on Long Island, command of his division devolved on Sullivan who was taken prisoner in the battle fought there in August, 1776. He was soon exchanged, and once more in active service. When General Charles Lee was surprised and carried off by a British detachment in New Jersey, he succeeded to the command of his division, and rendered good service in the battles of Brandywine and Germantown. In the winter of 1777, he was transferred to the command of the army in Rhode Island, where, after considerable maneuvering, he, in conjunction with Mifflin, who was at the time in command of the French fleet, laid siege to Newport, Rhode Island, then in possession of the English. In the morning, of coming to the aid of Sullivan, D'Esterre sailed for the island and left him under the necessity of raising the siege, and before the enemy. On the 29th of August, he paused in his retreat, and gave the British battle, which had the effect of preventing them pursuing him further.

In the summer of 1779, he assumed the command of an expedition against the Indians, in the State of New York, in which he was, after

Early in 1775, the people of Massachusetts began to prepare for war. Large quantities of ammunition and arms were secretly removed from Boston, and stored at Concord and other points. Gage, who was at the head of over three thousand five hundred troops in the city of

some time, joined by General Clinton. Marching upon the savages he found them encamped in immense numbers at Newton, between the Tioga river and the south end of Seneca lake, and under command of the celebrated Brandt and other tory leaders. Before the first of September, they were either slain, taken prisoners, or scattered and driven away. Soon after this, Sullivan, becoming disgusted at the manner in which he was treated by the Board of War, resigned his commission and retired to his farm in New Hampshire. He was soon after elected to Congress, where he served until 1786, when he was chosen President of New Hampshire. He held this office until 1789, when he was appointed district judge, filling that office until his death, which took place January 23, 1795, at the age of fifty-four years.

James Sullivan, brother of the general, born in 1744, was elected to Congress from Massachusetts in 1788. He became attorney-general of that State in 1790, and while in that position projected the Middlesex Canal, and wrote the "History of the District of Maine" which the Legislature ordered to be published. He was elected Governor of Massachusetts in 1807, and re-elected in 1808, in which year he died. His son, Hon. William Sullivan, was an eminent jurist and scholar and wrote many valuable works. He was a member of the Legislature of Massachusetts for nearly twenty-six years, and died in 1839.

The mother of General Sullivan was a woman of great energy and spirit. There is a story told of a visit which she paid to her distinguished son when he was Governor of New Hampshire and had as a guest his brother John. The servant, not knowing her, replied that she could not see the Governor—he was engaged. "But I must see him," said the old lady. "Then, madam, you will please to wait in the anteroom." "Tell your master," said she, sweeping out of the hall, "that the mother of two of the greatest men in America will not wait in any one's anteroom." The Governor having called his servant, on hearing the report said to his brother—"James, let us run after her; it's my mother, for certain." Accordingly the two governors sallied out, and soon overtook and made their peace with the indignant, but easily mollified lady.





the Tea Party, resolved to destroy the war material of the patriots, and on the night of the 18th of April sent eight hundred British regulars, under the command of Smith and Pitcairn, to Concord, to seize the military stores there. These were under the charge of Colonel James Barrett, an Irish-American officer, who had held a commission in the Provincial army during the French war. He was advanced in years, but at the urgent solicitation of his fellow-citizens, who told him that they only required instruction and advice, not active service, from him, he took command of a regiment. Information was given to the people along the road to Concord, by Paul Revere and William Dawes, of the British movement, and about a hundred American militia assembled at Lexington, six miles from the town just named. On seeing these, Pitcairn rode up to them, shouting, "Disperse, you villains! lay down your arms! Why don't you disperse, you rebels?" They did not obey, and some shots were fired at them without orders by the regulars, which were promptly returned, when Pitcairn gave the order to his troops to fire, and before they ceased eight Americans were dead or dying, while their comrades fell back and dispersed. The British, emboldened by their success, then pushed on to Concord, where they saw several hundred militia under Colonel Barrett assembled at some distance while the rest of the citizens were engaged in carrying off to a place of safety the much sought after military stores. Among those busied in this duty, mention is made of Hugh Cargil, a native of Ballyshannon, who, along with a man named Bullock, rendered good service that day by saving the town records from destruction, at great risk to himself. The British succeeded in destroying a portion of the war material which was still left at Concord. Some shots were exchanged, too, with fatal effect between them and the Americans, but the militia and people assembling at this

time in great numbers the regulars retreated rapidly towards Lexington. They were pursued and fired into all along the route. When they reached the last named town, a reinforcement of nearly a thousand men, sent to their aid from Boston, met them, but the retreat was soon continued, when the firing from the militia was renewed, and before the British reached Charlestown they had lost two hundred and seventy-three of their number, including killed, wounded, and missing, while the loss of the "rebels" only amounted to one hundred and three. The main body of the redcoats camped that night on Bunker Hill, and the next day they returned to their quarters in Boston.

The Provincial Congress was at once summoned to assemble. It met at Watertown, seven miles from Boston, on April 22, and decided to send a report of the events of the 19th to Arthur Lee, its agent in London. The dispatch bearer was instructed "to make for Dublin or any other good port in Ireland and from thence cross to Scotland or England." and hasten to his destination. He arrived eleven days before Gage's dispatches reached the British Ministers, and King George learned first from American sources how his troops had been beaten by those they had endeavored to trample on.

#### "THE LEXINGTON OF THE SEAS."

The manner in which the patriots had dealt with the marauding expedition to Concord, excited great enthusiasm everywhere throughout the colonies, and filled the minds of the British with mortification and bitterness. They sent their ships to commit depredations along the New England coasts, hoping by such acts to revenge themselves for their defeat. But here again they met with well-merited disaster. One of their armed vessels, th

[REDACTED]

*Margaretta*, put into Machias Bay, Maine, early in May. Among the townsmen was Maurice O'Brien, a native of Cork, who had five stalwart sons, all eager like himself to show their hatred of British tyranny and do their part in aiding the cause of American liberty. These with a number of their fellow citizens determined to capture the English ship, and on May 11th they went on board a sloop lying in the harbor, and bore down on the *Margaretta*. The latter hoisted her sails and scudded from the bay; but she was soon overhauled and boarded, when a fierce conflict ensued, which terminated, after about twenty men on each side had fallen, in favor of the Americans.

This was the *first naval fight* of the Revolution, and Jeremiah O'Brien was the victorious commander. Two British cruisers, the *Diligence* and the *Tapnagush*, were at once dispatched to lay Machias in ashes, but they also were met and captured by O'Brien, his brothers and comrades. The young hero immediately sailed, with his prizes and prisoners, for Watertown, Mass., where the Provincial Congress was in session, and received the thanks of that body and a captain's commission. But the British were not yet satisfied. They sent from Halifax a squadron, including a frigate, a twenty-gun corvette, a brig of sixteen guns, and several armed schooners, to crush the weak American fleet; but O'Brien, aided by Colonel Foster, was once more triumphant, and beat them off after a hard struggle. They then sent a strong body of land forces against Machias, but after the second day's march from Passamaquoddy the British troops returned to Halifax, despairing of effecting a passage through the woods, or perhaps, hopeless of accomplishing their purpose when confronted by those who had already conquered their fellow mercenaries three times over. We are told that Maurice O'Brien, old as he was,

could hardly be restrained from joining his gallant sons, in their daring enterprises against the British.

Cooper, says speaking of the exploit at Machias: "This affair was the Lexington of the Seas; for, like that celebrated conflict, it was the rising of the people against a regular force—was characterized by a long chase, a bloody struggle and a victory. It was also the *first blow* struck on the water after the war of the American Revolution had actually commenced."\*

Three of the O'Briens, Jeremiah, John, and William, continued in the naval service of the Republic until the close of the war. Jeremiah was appointed to the command of the *The Liberty*, and his brother William served under him as lieutenant. "For two years this vessel and another did good service on the northern coast, affording protection to American navigation, after which they were laid up."† Jeremiah, with others, then fitted out a twenty-gun letter-of-marque, called the *Hannibal*, manned by one hundred and thirty men. She took several prizes; but at length falling in with two British frigates, she was overhauled after a chase of forty-eight hours and captured. O'Brien was first confined in the *Jersey* prison-ship, otherwise known as the "Hell," at the Wallabout, where the Brooklyn Navy Yard now is. At the end of about six months he was sent to Mill Prison, England, whence he succeeded in effecting his escape about a year later. He retired after the war to Brunswick, Maine, where, at the age of over fourscore, he furnished the details of his brave achievements to a generation which had shamefully forgotten him and them.‡

John O'Brien was more fortunate than his gallant brother. From a journal kept by him the following extracts

\* Cooper's Naval History.

† Portland Eclectic. 1851.

‡ Historical Collection of Maine.



are taken: "On June 9, 1779, he sailed in the armed schooner *Hibernia*. On June 21th he took an English brig, and sent her in. On June 25, he had an engagement with a ship of seventeen guns, from three till five o'clock p. m., when a frigate came up and the *Hibernia* was compelled to leave her anticipated prize and was pursued by the frigate till midnight. O'Brien had three men killed and several wounded in this fight. On July 7 he took a schooner, and sent her to Newburyport. On the day following, in company with Captain Leach of Salem, he took a ship carrying thirteen four-pounders; a few hours after, a brig, and then a schooner laden with molasses. On July 11 he took a hermaphrodite brig in ballast, and then chased and captured another which just hove in sight. He adds that if Captain Leach and he had not parted in the fog they could have taken the whole fleet. Captain John O'Brien was engaged in a large number of battles and enterprises of various kinds against the British, but was never taken.\*

No trace is found, after the capture of the *Hannibal*, of Lieutenant William O'Brien. He was most probably among the eleven thousand victims of British cruelty, whose corpses were buried, or flung on the shores of the Wallabout.

Among the events of the Revolution the conflict at Machias Bay should ever be regarded as entitled to a conspicuous place. When the poet descants, or the orator dilates, upon the glories of the past, it should not be left unmentioned. The canvas of the painter should reproduce the scene; and upon the shore from which first England's red ensign was seen to sink before American manhood, a fitting monument should rise in honor of the brave men who compelled British tyranny to yield up the supremacy of the seas to those she had sought to treat as slaves.

\* Coffin's Newburyport.

Premonitory shocks of the great political which was to make totter and fall the w British power from the Lakes to the Gulf, were time throughout all the Colonies. The second Congress—that which addressed the people of at Philadelphia on May 10th, 1775, at ten o'clock before, Ethan Allen had summoned Ticonderoga, and when asked by what authority demand, replied, "In the name of the Great the Continental Congress." The fort was him without bloodshed, and two days later Cr fell into his hands.

At Savannah a number of the Sons of the same day that O'Brien won his victory over Machias, broke open the military magazine powder, sent some to Beaufort, South Carolina, what was left in convenient receptacles. The contained a large proportion of Irish Americans seen from the list of names of a committee at time previous to draft resolutions declaring British oppression. John Glenn was the amongst the members were Jonathan Bryan, William Gibbons, John Winn, E. Butler, Irish origin.

A convention met in May at Charlotte county, North Carolina, to express an opinion. Large numbers of Irish had settled in there were many Irish Americans among Included in the number were Richard Bason, Benjamin Tatton, John Flenekin (or Kennon, John Ford, R. Irwin, Matthew Queary, L. Wilson, and others, the majority of northern Irish stock. While this body was news of the fights at Lexington and (

f those  
e con-  
g Dec-

tofore  
es, are

under  
vested  
air re-  
cutive  
Colo-

on a  
rmed  
l and  
their  
nt of  
f this

That  
from  
here-  
try."

## CHAPTER XL.

### BUNKER HILL—SIEGE OF BOSTON—QUEBEC—EMBASSY TO CANADA.

ON the day following the battle of Lexington the Committee of Safety of Massachusetts issued a circular to the towns in that province, urging them to "hasten and encourage by all possible means the enlistment of men to form an army," and to send them forward at once. "Our all," continued the appeal, "is at stake. Death and devastation are the certain consequences of delay, every moment is infinitely precious, an hour lost may deluge your country in blood and entail perpetual slavery upon the few of your posterity who may survive the carnage."\* Another circular was sent to the other New England colonies on April 26, asking for as many troops as could be spared to march forthwith to the assistance of Massachusetts. The response was prompt. Companies and regiments were hurriedly organized and sent on to the rendezvous at Cambridge, and soon it was estimated that over twenty thousand men were assembled at that point. Artemas Ward was appointed commander-in-chief, but for some time there was considerable confusion among the hastily collected patriots, as the officers were not regularly commissioned, nor the men mustered in.

The New Hampshire troops, among whom Irish-Ameri-

---

\* Journals of Provincial Congress, p. 518.





cans formed a large proportion,\* came together at Bedford on April 26, and the field officers decided that Colonel

\* The following are the names of one company raised in Bedford, and from it the reader may form an estimate of the number of Irish recruited in New Hampshire for the Revolutionary forces. They were part of the force stationed at the rail-fence on Bunker Hill, who twice drove back the redcoats with the bayonet, and saved the main body of the patriots from total annihilation. The names are found in the Hist. Coll. of N. H., vol. i., p., 291:—

Colonel Daniel Moore,  
Capt. T. McLaughlin,  
John Patten, senior,  
James Patten,  
John Gault,  
John Riddle,  
James Martin,  
Hugh Horton,  
Samuel Moore,  
John Callahan (killed),  
Ira Greer,  
John McAllister,  
Robert Victorey,  
James Paterson,  
George Hogg,  
James Houston,  
Stephen March,  
Patrick O'Fling,  
John Gardnie,  
Jones Cutting,  
Barnet McCla,  
R. Dalrymple,  
Solomon Hemp,  
William Houston,  
Valentine Sullivan,  
Robert Morrel,  
David Riddle,

Major John Goffe,  
Lieut. John Patten,  
Sam. Patten,  
Robert Patten,  
Isaac Riddle,  
A. Martin,  
Stephen Goffe,  
Burns Chandler,  
Samuel Barr,  
James Moore,  
Wm. Parker,  
John Griffer,  
Daniel Larkin,  
John O'Neill,  
W. Gilmore,  
John Ross,  
John Tyrrel,  
C. Johnston,  
Robert Corn,  
John Hiller,  
Luke Gardner,  
Sam. Patterson,  
John Dorr (killed),  
Zac. Chandler,  
John Steel,  
Patrick O'Murphy,  
Eben Sullivan,

and eighteen others, making a total of seventy-one Irishmen who belonged to one New Hampshire company at the battle of Bunker Hill.

John Stark should take command until the decision of the Provincial Congress was made known. That body, on May 20, voted to raise two thousand men, who were to be formed into three regiments, of which Stark, Reed and Poor, were made colonels, with Folsom as brigadier-general. The latter, however, did not reach Cambridge until June 20, three days after Bunker Hill. Poor's battalion did not arrive at the camp until the battle was over, but Stark and Reed, with their regiments, hurried forward in time to participate in the memorable conflict.\*

No military operations of importance took place until the seventeenth of June, though several skirmishes occurred, which resulted generally in favor of the Americans. On June 12, General Gage, who commanded the British, issued a proclamation couched in the boastful and offensive terms usually employed by the military and civil authorities of Britain. "Whereas," he began, "the infatuated multitudes who have long suffered themselves to be conducted by certain well-known incendiaries and traitors in a fatal progression of crimes against the constitutional authority of the state, have at length proceeded to avowed rebellion, and the good effects which were expected to arise from the patience and lenity of the king's government have been often frustrated, and are now rendered hopeless by the influence of the same evil counsels, it only remains for those who are intrusted with the supreme rule, as well for the punishment of the guilty as the protection of the well-affected, to prove that they do not bear the sword in vain." He then declared martial law, denounced those who had assembled in arms and their abettors as "rebels and traitors," and offered pardon to those who would "stand distinct and separate from the parricides of the constitution," excepting, how-

\* Siege of Boston, p. 99.



ever, John Hancock and Samuel Adams, whose offences were, as he chose to fancy, "of too flagitious a nature to admit of any other consideration than that of condign punishment." People at a distance, who understood little or nothing of the question at issue, might, on reading this precious document, be led to imagine that the American patriots had been guilty of atrocious crimes, just as some few simple and easily deluded persons are imposed on by British proclamations and "royal" speeches at the present day with regard to the efforts of the people of Ireland to assert their rights. But the American Sons of Liberty were no more impressed by Gage's pompous pronunciamento than Irish Nationalists have been by similar productions, and its only effect was to embitter them still more and make them eager for an opportunity to avenge his insults and show their contempt for his threats.

The British, having received considerable reinforcements, and rendered still more confident in their own ability to overcome the colonists by the arrival of Generals Howe, Clinton and Burgoyne, determined to advance their lines and take possession of Dorchester Heights. The night of June 18 was the time fixed for this undertaking, but information of the proposed movement was soon conveyed to the American camp, and the patriots decided to anticipate their enemies, and to fortify and hold Bunker Hill, if possible. Detachments from several regiments, amounting in all to about twelve hundred men, were accordingly sent to the point mentioned on the night of the sixteenth to throw up works; but the officers in command, on arriving at the place, concluded that another position, nearer Boston and known as Breed's Hill, would suit their purpose better, and accordingly they entrenched there. At early dawn on the seventeenth, the British were surprised and provoked at seeing the work which had been accomplished so successfully

during the night by their enemies, and they resolved upon an attack. It was made in the afternoon. Nearly four thousand English regulars were twice driven back, by little over half their number of untrained Americans. But the ammunition of the patriots soon became exhausted, and when the British, strongly reinforced, advanced a third time to the assault, aided by a heavy artillery fire, no means were left of offering them an effective resistance, and General Prescott gave his men the order to retreat, which was reluctantly obeyed. During the engagement the New Hampshire regiments of Stark and Reed, very largely composed of Irish-Americans, were posted on Bunker Hill, and, aided by some Connecticut and Massachusetts troops, "maintained their ground with great firmness and intrepidity and successfully resisted every attempt to turn their flank.\* This line indeed was nobly defended. The force here did a great service, for it saved the main body, who were retreating, in disorder from the redoubt, from being cut off by the enemy."† And when it was useless to continue the conflict longer, the men who composed it "gave ground, but with more regularity than could have been expected of troops who had not been long under discipline, and many of whom had never before seen an engagement."‡ Stark's regiment lost sixty in killed and wounded, a greater loss than was sustained by any other regiment except Prescott's.

When his troops were about to encounter the British, the Irish-American veteran addressed them in a brief but fiery speech, which was responded to with cheers. Major Andrew McClary, of this regiment, was killed after the conflict was ended, and his loss was deeply regretted. "He was nearly six feet and a half in height and of an athletic frame. Dur-

\*Siege of Boston, p. 151.

† Committee of Safety's Account.

‡ Siege of Boston, p. 193.



-----

ing the action he fought with great bravery and amidst the roar of artillery his stentorian voice was heard animating the men and inspiring them with his own energy. After the action was over he rode to Medford to procure bandages for the wounded; and on his return went with a few of his comrades to reconnoiter the British, then on Bunker Hill. As he was on his way to rejoin his men a shot from a frigate lying in the harbor passed through his body. He leaped a few feet from the ground, pitched forward, and fell dead on his face. He was carried to Medford and interred with the honors of war."\* Another distinguished officer who fell on the 17th was Major Willard Moore, of Doolittle's regiment, who, owing to the absence of his colonel and lieutenant-colonel, took command himself and displayed great courage and skill. The depositions speak in glowing terms of his good qualities. He was a firm patriot and a chivalrous soldier. On the second attack he received a ball in the thigh, and while his men were carrying him to the rear, another ball went through his body. He called for water, but none could be obtained nearer than the Neck. He lingered until the time of the retreat, when, feeling his wounds to be mortal, he requested his attendants to lay him down, leave him, and take care of themselves, and died a soldier's death. He was from Paxton; took a prominent part in the Worcester convention of January, 1774; was chosen captain of the minute-men a year later, and on the Lexington alarm immediately marched for Cambridge.† The death of Warren was however the severest blow which the Cause of America and freedom received that day. He had performed his duties as President of the Provincial Congress at Watertown on June 6th, and passed the night there. On the morning of the battle he hastened to Cambridge, where

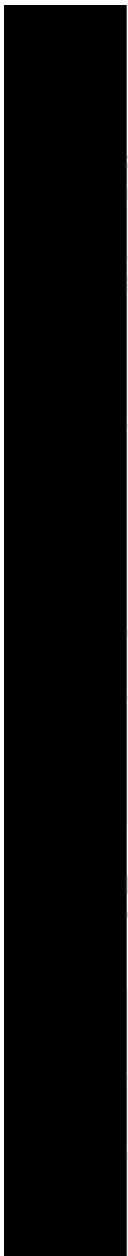
\* *Siege of Boston*, p. 186.

† *Ibid.*, p. 178.

through illness he was compelled to lie down and rest. When however he became aware that the British were about to attack the works on Breed's Hill, he could not be restrained from proceeding at once to the post of danger. When he arrived at the redoubt, he was received with enthusiastic cheers by the men and was tendered the command by Prescott. He however declined promptly the proffered honor, although he had been elected major-general a few days before, and said that he had only come to encourage a good cause. "He displayed great bravery throughout the conflict and was among the last to leave the redoubt. Falling back slowly and reluctantly he had retired but a few rods when a ball struck him in his forehead, and he sank lifeless to the ground. His body lay on the field until the next day, when it was recognized by acquaintances who came out from Boston to view the scene, and buried where he fell. After the evacuation of Boston by the British, the remains were disinterred and transferred to King's Chapel, whence they subsequently removed to St. Paul's Church. General Howe said that the death of Warren was equal to the loss of five hundred men."

Colonel Nixon, while fighting "with great gallantry at the head of his regiment," and bravely supported by his captains Gleason, Moore, McFarland, McCobb, and others, was severely wounded and carried off the field. Among the thirty prisoners taken by the British, several of whom it is presumed were wounded when captured, judging from the fact that twenty were reported dead before the following September, the names of Daniel McGrath, Lawren

\* At Irish National Festivals it was usual to couple the names of Warren and Montgomery. For instance, at the St. Patrick's Day festival the Hibernian Society of Savannah, 1824, the sixth toast was "*War and Montgomery*—offerings made by Ireland upon the altar erected Liberty in America."—*Works of Bishop England*, vol. v., p. 58.



Sullivan, and others of Irish origin, appear in the list published in the journals of the month named. Henry Knox (afterwards General and Chief of Artillery) participated in the action as a volunteer, and displayed the utmost bravery and coolness.

On June 15, two days before the battle of Bunker Hill, Congress resolved to choose a general "to command all the Continental forces raised or to be raised for the defence of American liberty." Washington was elected by a unanimous vote, and officially notified to that effect by Hancock on June 17. Four days later, he set out for Cambridge, where he arrived on July 2, accompanied by Joseph Reed as his aid and secretary. He found himself at the head of about fourteen thousand men, fit for duty, while the English in Boston had nearly twelve thousand effective men on land, and a considerable naval force besides.

By an act passed June 17, 1775, Congress authorized the raising of a corps of riflemen, to the number of eight hundred, and a few days latter two additional companies were voted from Pennsylvania. Recruiting proceeded so rapidly that one company under Daniel Morgan joined Washington at Cambridge on the 25th of July, and in less than two months a force of over fourteen hundred men, composed of the hardy frontiersmen and farmers of Virginia, Western Pennsylvania, and Maryland, arrived at the camp at Cambridge. These troops were mainly Irish-Americans. Their first Colonel, Thompson, was a native of Ireland, and a member of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick of Philadelphia. Before the Revolution he resided at Pittsburgh. He was made a brigadier-general early in 1776, and, having joined General Sullivan in Canada, was made prisoner at Three Rivers. Edward Hand, formerly an officer of the Irish Brigade, was the first colonel. He succeeded General

soon

raised to the rank of Brigadier-General and fought close of the war.

"These riflemen were the only purely distinct which the Revolution produced. In costume as of fighting they were purely American. Their a white or brown linen hunting shirt, ornamented with fringe and secured by a belt of wampum, in which and tomahawk were stuck. Their leggings and were ornamented in the Indian fashion with brilliantly dyed porcupine quills. A round hat a costume which was simple, appropriate and picturesque."\* Upon their breasts they wore the motto "LIBERTY OR DEATH." At a review "a company of on a quick advance fired at and hit objects several diameter at a distance of several hundred yards account of their deadly aim they became objects the British. One of them, who was taken prisoner, died to England and gazed at and described a noble curiosity. †

Their peculiar dress, manners and the Irish prevalent among them, sometimes led to banters part of their New England comrades, which occasion would have resulted in a serious riot, had not for the promptitude and vigor of Washington. One of them were one day, in the winter of '75-'76, at Cambridge, when some men of Glover's Massacrement began to criticise jocosely the peculiarities followed up their remarks with a shower of which was promptly replied to. Both parties excited, outsiders joined in the contest, and thousand men were engaged in a fight of alarm.

\* Historic Fields and Mansions of Middlesex.

† Lossing.





tions. Glover rushed in haste to Washington's headquarters and announced that his men were in a state of mutiny. The General at once mounted his horse and, taking with him the Hon. James Sullivan, brother of General Sullivan, rode at full gallop to the scene of disturbance. When arrived there "he threw the bridle of his horse into his servant's hands and rushing into the thickest of the fight seized two of the contestants by the throat, keeping them at arm's length, talking to and shaking them."\* His presence and rebukes soon brought the men to their senses. They scattered in all directions and "in less than three minutes none remained on the ground but the two he had colared."†

On a previous occasion the good feeling, common sense and wise foresight of Washington prevented a difficulty of a similar character, and which might have led to more serious consequences. It had been the custom in Boston and other parts of New England to celebrate what was called Guy Fawkes Day (November 5), the anniversary of the alleged Gunpowder Plot, by a parade in which an effigy of the Pope was carried and afterwards burned. Some among the New England troops at Cambridge proposed to celebrate the anniversary in 1775 in the usual silly and offensive manner, and owing to the large proportion of Irish in the Continental army, there was great reason to apprehend a serious difficulty, should an attempt be made to carry out the project. The matter coming to the ears of the Commander-in-Chief, he forbade the proposed display, characterized it as a ridiculous and childish custom, and expressed his surprise that there should be officers and men in the army so devoid of common sense as not to see its impropriety, at a time too when the Colonies were endeavor-

\* Trask, quoted by Irving in "Life of Washington." † Irving.

ing to bring Canada into an alliance with themselves the common enemy.\* His words had the desired effect; the intended demonstration was abandoned, and preserved. The British, however, celebrated the discharges of artillery, the last time they had an opportunity to do so in Boston.

Among the General officers appointed by Congress Washington had received his commission, were Mifflin and Sullivan, and the latter within a short time sent to Folsom in command of the New Hampshire troops, of the regiments of Stark, Reed and Poor. Nixon's was afterwards added to his command. Henry Knox, of the Charitable Irish Society of Boston, was made Major of Artillery.† He brought from Crown Point an

\* Historic Fields, etc., of Middlesex.

† Major-General Henry Knox was born at Boston of Irish descent in 1750. When the Revolution commenced he was engaged in a bookseller, in his native city, but he promptly sacrificed his private interests in his zeal for the national cause.

"The man," says Peterson, "who, of all others, stood first in Washington's affections was Henry Knox, commander of the artillery in the American army. The intellectual abilities of Knox were sound, but his moral ones that were pre-eminently deserving of esteem, and consideration of which Washington bestowed upon him the love and confidence of a brother. In every action where Washington appeared, Knox attended him: in every council of war he bore a part. His views at the head of the ordnance were invaluable. He assumed the command of that branch of the army in the first year of the war, and continued at the head until the close of the contest. At the battle of Monmouth, in which he handled his guns with such skill and admiration of which Washington bestowed upon him the love and confidence of a brother, and, in fact, contributed more, perhaps, than anything else to the success of the last desperate assault. Greene had so high an opinion of Knox that when Washington offered to the former the command of the army, he proposed Knox in his stead. \* \* \* His first connection with the artillery service occurred immediately after the battle of the Clouds. Knox had not been engaged in that struggle; but, a few days afterwards, he made his escape from Boston, and, joining his com-



deroga, in the depth of the winter of 1775-'76, over frozen lakes and a rough and snow-covered country, thirty-nine guns, fourteen mortars and two howitzers—"a noble train of artillery"—for service in the siege of Boston.

arms at Cambridge, offered to undertake the arduous task of transporting from Ticonderoga and Canada, the heavy ordnance and military stores captured there by the Americans. The energetic spirit of the young man, and the handsome manner in which he executed a task, abounding with what some would have considered impossibilities, attracted the special notice of Washington, and Knox, in consequence, was rewarded with the command of this very artillery, most of which he employed with good service in the siege of Boston. Thus at the age of twenty-five he occupied one of the most responsible positions in the army. From this period Knox remained with Washington, taking part in all the principal battles fought by the commander-in-chief.

When Cornwallis surrendered at Yorktown, Knox was promoted to the rank of major-general. He was in command of the American troops when they marched into New York, on its evacuation by the English, November 25, 1783, halting for a few hours near where now stands the armory of the Sixty-ninth regiment and then moving forward to take possession of Fort George, "amid the acclamations of thousands of emancipated freemen and the roar of artillery upon the battery." When, on December 4, the principal officers of the army assembled at Fraunce's Tavern to bid farewell to Washington, the latter entered the room where they were all waiting, and, taking a glass of wine in his hand expressed the wish that their "latter days might be as prosperous and happy as their former ones had been glorious and honorable." Then, having drunk, he said: "I cannot come to each of you to take my leave, but shall be obliged to you if each will come and take me by the hand." Knox, who stood next to him, grasped his hand and then "while the tears flowed down the cheeks of each," the commander-in-chief embraced and kissed him as he did afterwards the other officers. Knox succeeded Lincoln as Secretary of War under the old confederation, and in 1789, on the organization of the Federal Government, he was chosen by Washington to fill the same position in his cabinet. He resigned in 1794, and went to live at Thomaston, Maine. In 1798, when a foreign war seemed imminent, he was appointed to an important command, but the trouble

Washington was anxious to drive the English from the city as soon as Knox had executed his mission. A majority of the American general officers, however, delayed for various reasons, and the Commander-in-chief reluctantly yielded to these representations. Smallpox while was rife in Boston, and a large number of soldiers suffering from it were sent out of the city by the British, evidently with a view of communicating the disease to the American army. At length, on March 4, 1776, the revolutionary forces took possession of and fortified Dorchester Heights, which commanded the harbor. Preparations were made by Howe for an attack on the American works were rendered useless by a storm which arose, and prevented the arrival of reinforcements from the fleet, and he finally resolved to evacuate the city. On St. Patrick's Day the English evacuated the city, having plundered the stores and many of the soldiers abandoned Boston and, embarking on board their ships, sailed after a delay of some days in Nantasket Roads, accompanied by over one thousand American Tories, who preferred to remain subjects of a foreign king, rather than become freemen in their native land. The following day the order of the day was issued by Washington on this day of triumph and glory for America:

"Head Quarters, 17th March 1776.

"Parole, BOSTON, Countersign, ST. PATRICK'S DAY."

"The regiments under marching orders to move on tomorrow morning."

"Brigadier of the Day, General Sullivan."

"By His Excellency's Command."

Irish Society of Boston. His desire to mingle and be identified with the men of Irish origin was further shown in 1782, when he became a member of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick of Philadelphia. The Society of the Cincinnati was formed at his suggestion. He died in 1806, at Thomaston, Maine.

The authors thank Dr. J. H. Brown for his helpful comments on the manuscript.

About this time Stephen Moylan,\* brother of the Right Rev. Dr. Moylan, Catholic Bishop of Cork, and first President of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick of Philadelphia, was selected by Washington as one of his aids, and became, with Joseph Reed,† one of the "military family" of the Com-

\* Brigadier-General Stephen Moylan was born at Cork City, Ireland, in 1734. He was a brother of the Right Rev. Dr. Moylan, Catholic bishop of the diocese. Coming to America he landed at Philadelphia when a young man, and became an ardent supporter of the national cause. He was one of the first to respond to the call to arms after the battle of Lexington, and when Washington had assumed command of the army at Cambridge, he chose Moylan as one of his aids, and afterwards appointed him commissary-general. Anxious, however, to be engaged as actively as possible, the young Irishman accepted the command of a regiment of horse composed of Pennsylvania troops; served at its head through the war, was engaged in nearly all the principal battles, and rose to the rank of brigadier-general.

His name stands first on the list of the original members of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick of Philadelphia, organized in 1771, and his signature is the first attached to the rules. He was the first president of the society, and was one of the most active in its formation. He was also its last president, being again elected to the office in 1796, after an interval of twenty-two years. Moylan was a man of high honor and respectability, and one of the original members of the Society of the Cincinnati. After the war he resided some years in Chester county, where he was Prothonotary of the Court. He died at Philadelphia in 1811, and was interred in the burial-ground of St. Mary's Church, South Fourth street. General Moylan had three brothers in America, of whom two at least were in the military service of the Republic. One of them, John, was a quartermaster in the American army. He was lost in the *Shilalah* on her voyage to France. Another brother, Jasper, was a member of the legal profession, and in the enjoyment of an extensive practice. He belonged to the famous "First Troop," and did good service when called on. A third brother was named James. All four belonged to Friendly Sons of St. Patrick.

† Brigadier-General Joseph Reed was the son of an Irish settler in New Jersey, and was born at Trenton in 1741, and his father soon afterwards moved to Philadelphia. Joseph was educated at Princeton in 1757.

mander-in-Chief. From this position he was promoted to that of Commissary-General. Before going to the front for active service and, accepting a command in the Pennsylvania Line, fought with distinguished bravery during the war, rising to the rank of Brigadier-General, and retaining the confidence and warm regard of the chief.

and then studied law with Richard Stockton, afterwards a member of the committee of correspondence and was chosen, in 1774, president of the first popular assembly in Philadelphia. He, in 1775, accompanied Washington to his secretary and aid, and remained in that position during the campaign. He was made adjutant-general in the army, and distinguished himself at the battles of Long Island, Germantown. He was chosen a member of Congress in 1778, when the Earl of Cornwall and William Eden came from England as commissioners to endeavor to secure the return of the colonies to the allegiance. Finding their proposals rejected, the commissioners to the usual custom of English agents—endeavored to secure the return of the colonies to the allegiance by bribery, and a woman, the wife of a loyalist, was induced to offer Reed "ten thousand pounds and the best post in the government would betray his trust, or, as it was expressed, exert his influence to settle the dispute. When the proposition was made, Reed temptress he at once indignantly replied: "I am not worth but such as I am Britain is not rich enough to do it." His integrity, and the noble answer with which he repelled the temptation, known, and Congress declared all correspondence with the traitors to be at an end. Reed was chosen president of the Congress of Pennsylvania in October 1778, and continued in that position until he resumed his law practice. Like all men of firmness and forward honesty, he suffered much abuse from his political opponents, but when the clouds of party rancor passed away men were sorry for the injustice done him. He died March 18, 1812, at the age of forty-two. His youngest son, George W., colonel in the army, was killed at Vicksburg in 1812, and died a prisoner in the hands of the British in Jamaica.

© 2004 Blackwell Publishing Ltd, *Journal of Internal Medicine* 255: 105–112

[illegible]

The proportion of Irish-Americans in the Revolutionary army at the siege of Boston cannot be accurately estimated, but all the evidence available goes to show that they formed nearly one-half of Washington's forces, and that they displayed a zeal and bravery worthy of their race and the cause in which they were engaged. An eminent writer says that "To this newly organized army of independence the Irish immigrants, who had been driven from their native homes by landlord oppression, flocked in great numbers, rightly concluding that by the overthrow of the British forces in America they were revenging themselves upon their late odious and relentless taskmasters; nor were there any in the American ranks more enthusiastic in the cause, brave in the highest degree, and abiding by the General until the cause of American Independence was finally triumphant."\*

#### MONTGOMERY'S ATTACK ON QUEBEC.

In the autumn of 1775 Congress determined upon causing a vigorous effort to be made for the annexation of Canada. A force under Gen. Schuyler had already been sent, to enter that province by way of the Northern lakes; but, owing to the illness of the officer named, the command devolved upon Gen. Richard Montgomery.† Arnold was now ordered.

\* Marmion. Maritime Ports of Ireland.

† Richard Montgomery was born at Raphoe, Donegal county, Ireland, December, 1737. His father represented Lifford in the Irish Parliament, and his brother afterwards sat for many years in that body as member for Donegal. Montgomery entered the British army at the age of eighteen, and served under Wolfe at the taking of Quebec in 1759. Having returned home, he in 1772 again came to America, and settled at Rhinebeck, on the Hudson, where he purchased a small estate. Soon afterwards he married a daughter of Robert Livingston. The union was a most happy one while it lasted, and the faithful wife, although she survived him half a century, ever cherished the memory of "her soldier" with unfading affection. When the Revolution broke

with eleven hundred men, to co-operate with the first named expedition and advance by another route on Quebec. His troops included ten companies of New England musketeers, and three of Morgan's Irish-American riflemen. Montgomery, with about two thousand men, laid siege to St. John's, which held out for a time, but he, having taken in the meanwhile the fort of Chambly, in which he found several pieces of artillery and a considerable quantity of ammunition, was enabled to prosecute his task with so much vigor that the English garrison of St. John's surrendered on November 3.

Montgomery, while engaged in the siege, sent Colonel Ethan Allen into Canada for the purpose of inducing the people there to take up arms and aid the Americans. Al-

out, he, "with all the ardor of the people of his birthland," to use the words of Loosing, ranged himself on the side of the patriots. In April, 1775, he was selected as a delegate to the first Provincial Convention in New York, where he was distinguished for promptness of decision and soundness of judgment. In the autumn of the same year he was offered and accepted the appointment of Brigadier-General, and tore himself away from the home where he was so happy, saying: "The will of an oppressed people, compelled to choose between liberty and slavery, must be obeyed." When ordered to proceed on the expedition to Canada he was accompanied by his devoted wife as far as Saratoga, her apprehensions being soothed by his cheerfulness and assurances of success. Soon the chief command of the expedition devolved on him, and he moved forward rapidly, taking Fort St. John on November 3, Montreal on the 12th following, and effecting a junction with Arnold under the walls of Quebec on December 5. The assault of the 31st would in all probability have been successful had he not fallen, but his death disheartened his men and caused them to abandon the attempt. The refusal at first of Sir Guy Carleton to allow the remains of America's first Irish general "the poor courtesy of a coffin" is mentioned in the *Massachusetts Historical Collections*, vol. i, p. 3—year 1792. His loss was deeply felt all over the country. Congress passed resolutions of condolence with his family in their bereavement, and expressive of its "grateful remem-





len succeeded in securing several hundred Canadian recruits, but on his return to camp, he was induced to attempt the capture of Montreal. He was unsuccessful, was made prisoner, threatened by the English General, Prescott, with a halter at Tyburn, and afterwards put on board a British man-of-war, where he was handcuffed, and his limbs encased in shackles to which a bar of iron eight feet long was fastened. He was then thrown into the hold of the ship, with only a sailor's chest for his bed and seat, and kept in this situation for five weeks, when he was sent to Quebec, and transferred to another vessel. Here he obtained a brief

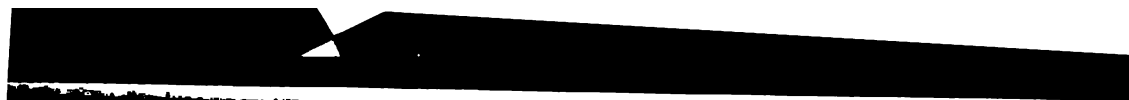
brance, profound respect, and high veneration," for him and decided that a monument should be erected to his memory. This was placed in front of St. Paul's Church, Broadway, New York, and upon it appears the following inscription:

This  
Monument is Erected by Order of Congress,  
25th of January, 1776,  
To Transmit to Posterity a Grateful Remem-  
brance of the Patriotic Conduct, Enter-  
prise, and Perseverance of  
MAJOR-GENERAL RICHARD MONTGOMERY,  
Who, after a series of successes, amid the most dis-  
couraging difficulties, FELL in the attack on  
Quebec, 31st December, 1775.  
Aged 37 years.

In the same enclosure stand the monuments of two other Irish "rebels"—Emmet and McNeven—one on either side of that of the hero who fell at Quebec. Even in the London Parliament his character was eulogised, not only by his countrymen Burke and Barre, but by Chatham and Fox. Lord North spoke of him as "*only* a brave, able, humane and generous *rebel*," adding, "curse on his virtues, they have undone his country;" but Fox replied: "The name of '*rebel*' is no mark of disgrace; all the great asserters of liberty, the saviours of their country, the benefactors of mankind in all ages have been called rebels." Montgomery's widow, in 1818, finally succeeded in obtaining the remains of her gallant husband. They were disinterred at Quebec, conveyed to New York, and deposited, with imposing ceremonies, beneath the mural monument erected by order of Congress in front of St. Paul's.

respite from the brutal treatment to which he had been subjected, but on the approach of the American army he was again handcuffed, placed on board an English war-ship and, with thirty-three other American prisoners, sent to England. They were all crowded in a single compartment, and not allowed to leave it during the entire voyage, which lasted forty days. When taken ashore at Falmouth, the prisoners were still kept in irons, and treated with extreme harshness. Allen was repeatedly threatened with execution as a traitor, and the letters which he wrote to his friends were intercepted. At length the British Government resolved to send the prisoners back to America; not, however, as freemen, but probably as a preliminary to exchanging them for Englishmen. On the passage out the ship put in to Cork, where the people showed the greatest possible sympathy for the brave and ill-treated Americans, and sought to show them all possible kindness. Poor Allen still wore, through poverty, the same dress in which he had been captured, but the citizens of Cork supplied himself and his comrades with new suits of clothes, and with as much money as the English officers would permit. The prisoners were first brought to New York, whence they were transferred to Halifax and kept in a prison-ship there until scurvy broke out among them owing to the bad food they received; when, after great efforts to secure better treatment, they were removed to the town jail. After a time they were again conveyed to New York, where Allen was allowed to go on parole within certain narrow limits, and at length exchanged for a British colonel.

After the surrender of St. John's, Montgomery advanced on Montreal, which the English commander, Carleton, abandoned to its fate and escaped by night down the river in a canoe. The Irish-American General entered the city on November 12, and at once gained the good-will of the citi-



zens by engaging not to interfere with the free exercise of the Catholic religion, or with their laws or municipal government. Many of them in fact joined his forces, and to some extent made up for the loss caused by the withdrawal of some of those under him, who insisted on returning home because of the expiration of their term of enlistment. Montgomery then proceeded to Quebec and joined Arnold, who had reached the vicinity nearly three weeks before, at Point aux Trembles, about twenty miles from the city, on December 1. He gave Arnold's half-naked troops, new clothing, which he had the foresight to bring with him, and immediately after pushed on to his destination through huge drifts of snow and in the midst of a blinding storm of sleet. His whole force, including Arnold's command, now amounted to only nine hundred men. Nevertheless he commenced the siege of Quebec and continued it for three weeks; when, finding that his artillery was unfit to produce any serious effects upon the solid ramparts, that smallpox was carrying off numbers of his little force, and that many whose period of enlistment had nearly expired began to be discontented and anxious to turn homeward, he determined upon the bold and desperate course of attempting to carry the city by assault. It was decided that one detachment should make a series of feigned attacks upon the Upper Town, while Montgomery and Arnold, at the head of other bodies of troops, should move on the Lower Town from opposite directions, and, meeting at Mountain street, force a passage through Prescott Gate and up to the citadel.

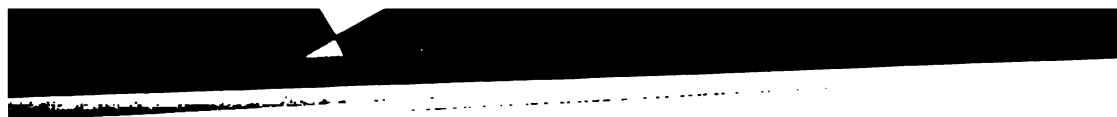
In the gray dawn of the last morning of 1775, amid a raging snow storm, over huge masses of ice and through heavy drifts, Montgomery led his men along the route decided on. In his path stood a battery of three-pounders, in front of which was a stockade of strong posts, well fastened at top and

me of t

self, until he had succeeded in clearing a troops, when, placing himself at their head "Men of New York, you will not fear to follow your general leads," and rushed forward to capture the column: he fell, and with him his aids Cheeseman, and several of the foremost soldiers. *that the Canadian militia who manned the posts abandoned their posts on the approach of the Americans, unwilling to fight against the latter, and the English sea-captain who applied a match to the powder discharge caused the death of Montgomery and his officers.\** His troops, disheartened by the fall of their chief, fell back hastily to Wolfe's Cove, and made no effort to carry out the programme agreed on.

Arnold, while advancing at the head of his troops from Roch's suburb, was wounded in the knee by a shot and carried back to the hospital, where he died a few days after Montgomery's death. The command of his troops was given upon Morgan, who, after a hard struggle, succeeded in driving the English from the city, which they endeavored to check him, the death of the Irish-American riflemen causing great consternation among their antagonists. After this achievement he cleared the second barrier, which he succeeded, after a struggle of over three hours' duration, in making his way through. Just however as he was preparing to rush upon the citadel, an English detachment, sent around by a secret route, attacked him in the rear; and, surrounded on all sides, less of receiving help from any quarter, he was forced to surrender. A portion of his

\* "Hawkins' History of Quebec."



of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick of Philadelphia, who had been the first colonel of the rifle regiment. In a battle fought with an immensely superior force of British troops, at Three Rivers, towards the middle of June, Thompson was taken prisoner, as was also Colonel, afterwards General Irvine, another Irish officer of distinguished ability. Sullivan was afterwards forced to fall back before the numerous and well-equipped army of Burgoyne, and Canada was for the time preserved to the British Crown.

Early in 1776, Congress appointed commissioners to visit Canada, and try to induce the people of that province to make common cause with the American Revolutionists against England. Franklin, Charles Carroll and Samuel Chase, together with Father John Carroll, afterwards Archbishop of Baltimore—the “Jesuit rebel,” as the English and their Tory allies here used to call him—were chosen for this purpose. The commissioners left New York on April 2, but did not reach Montreal until the 29th. Their labors, however, did not produce the desired result, and they soon returned. Their failure may be attributed partly to the feeling excited among the Canadians on hearing the expressions used by the Congress of 1774, when speaking of the Quebec Act—which established religious liberty in Canada—in an address to the people of Britain.\* Another reason for their comparatively short

---

\* The Continental Congress, in 1774, had resolved that the act of the London Parliament establishing the Catholic religion in the province of Quebec, was “an infringement and violation of the rights of the colonists.” In its “Address to the People of Great Britain,” in October, 1774, it affected to fear that the Canadians, “their numbers daily swelling with Catholic emigrants from Europe, might on occasion be fit instruments to reduce the ancient free Protestant colonies to the same state of slavery with themselves. Admit,” continued the address, “that the ministry, by the power of Britain and the aid of our Catholic neighbors should be able to reduce us to a state of humiliation and



stay in Canada was that while they were at Montreal, a messenger arrived from Quebec with the news that a British fleet, with a large body of troops on board, had reached that port, and had soon after attacked and defeated the weakened American forces. It was obviously necessary to secure the sending of strong reinforcements by Congress to the assistance of its army in Canada, in order to put it in a position to check the contemplated British advance southward. Franklin fell ill on the way home from Montreal, and was tenderly nursed by Father Carroll, speaking of whose kindness the patriot philosopher says, in a letter: "I find I grow daily more feeble, and think I could hardly have got along so far but for Mr. Carroll's friendly assistance and tender care of me."\* He continued to entertain through life the warmest regard for Dr. Carroll, and showed his feeling in a special manner when the question of the appointment of a Bishop to preside over the Church in the United States was under consideration by the ecclesiastical authorities at Rome.

slavery; may not a ministry with the same armies enslave you? Remember the taxes from America, the wealth, and particularly the Catholics of this vast continent will then be in the power of your enemies, nor will you have any reason to expect that after making slaves of us, many among us should refuse to assist in reducing you to the same abject state." The British officials in Canada promptly circulated these addresses among the people, and thereby excited a strong feeling of indignation in their minds against those who had spoken of them in so offensive a manner. When, therefore, the Congress of 1775 sent an address to the people of Canada, it was coldly received, and when, in the following year, the embassy was sent to invite the Canadians to make common cause with the other colonists, it failed of success, because they still felt offended at the sentiments expressed by the Congress of '74 with regard to themselves and their faith.

\* Letter to the Commissioners in Canada, dated New York, May 27, 1776, in "Life of Franklin."

## CHAP. XII.

## IRISH-AMERICAN SIGNERS OF THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.

THE expulsion of the British from Boston, 1776, gave intense satisfaction to the Irish-Americans, and inspired them with confidence in their cause. The announcement made by the British of their intention to purchase mercenaries purchased in Northern Europe, were on their way to America, or to be sent to the West Indies, gave rise to a popular feeling in favor of independence grew stronger and more decided. At the convention of North Carolina empowered from that province in Congress "to co-operate with the other colonies in declaring independence," on the 15th of May the convention of Virginia instructed its delegates in Congress "to propose to that respectable body to declare the United Colonies to be free, independent States, absolved from all allegiance to the Crown or Parliament of Great Britain."

The other colonies followed, more or less, and thus set them.

On June 7, Richard Henry Lee, of Virginia, introduced a resolution in Congress, declaring "that the United Colonies are, and ought to be, free and independent States, that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British Crown, and that all political connection with Great Britain is, and ought to be totally dissolved." The discussion of the resolution was postponed.



\_\_\_\_\_



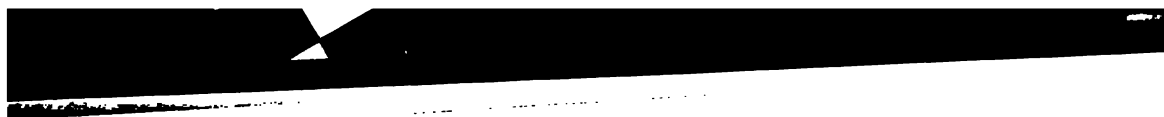
day, when it was debated in committee of the whole, and finally passed by a bare majority of the colonies, on the 17th. In order to secure greater, and, if possible, perfect unanimity, further action in Congress on the subject was postponed to the first of July, and meanwhile a committee was appointed, consisting of Jefferson, John Adams, Franklin, Sherman and Livingston, to prepare a Declaration of Independence. It was, however, written entirely by the first named. The resolution referred to above was, after having been reported from the committee of the whole on July 1st, passed on the day following, when the Declaration was brought for consideration, and after being debated and amended, was finally adopted, every colony voting for it on July 4th. The proceedings on that day are thus recorded in the "Journal of Congress," published by Captain John Dunlap, of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick of Philadelphia, by order of the committee appointed to superintend the publication of this record.

"July 4th, 1776. Agreeably to the order of the day, the Congress resolved itself into a committee of the whole to take into further consideration the Declaration, and after some time the President resumed the chair, and William Harrison reported that the committee have agreed to a Declaration. The Declaration being read was agreed to by the colonies."\*

It was two o'clock in the afternoon when the Secretary, Charles Thomson, of Maghera, Derry, rose to announce the final decision to Congress assembled in Independence Hall. It was a solemn moment, and as he concluded a deep silence overspread the whole assembly. A scene of a different kind was soon witnessed on the streets. The tidings had gone forth throughout the city that the final

\* Journals of Congress, of July, 1776.

decision was to be made on that day. From an early hour in the morning thousands of citizens had thronged the streets. Their faces wore an anxious expression, and patriots had mustered their whole strength, their desires might be realized, yet fearing that they might not. The Tories—and they were numerous—were in the streets with a malignant scowl upon their faces. It had been announced that, should the Declaration of Independence be unanimously adopted, the old bell in the steeple would ring out the tidings to the people. At an early hour that Congress convened the old bellman came to the steeple. On that bell was written: "To be rung throughout all the land unto all the inhabitants thereof." The bellman, too old and feeble to run down the steeple, had placed his boy at the door below to give notice when the announcement should be made. Hours passed slowly by, and no signal was given by the impatient watcher. Noon came, but it brought no tidings to the thousands of beating hearts in the streets. Men looked upon each other in doubt; their faces grew pale, but the expression of their features told of the feelings which agitated them. The old bellman, having given up all hope of receiving the longed-for tidings, suddenly he heard the clapping of hands behind him, and looking down saw the boy thus giving vent to his feelings, while he shouted upward, almost wild with excitement, "Ring, ring." At once the sound of bells was heard, the death-knell of British despotism, the note of American Liberty, and a shout, loud as a thunder clap, pealed up from the vast multitude. The other bells in the city caught up the glad tidings, the guns joined in the chorus, and men, hurrying in all directions, shouted in the fullness of their joy to the city with their loud acclamations. That night



4.

ed, the cannon  
ld high carni-

of its adop-  
ed at length  
ngrossed on  
e second of  
ir delegates  
ole number  
ration took  
bservatory  
f the State  
, and from  
f St. Pat-  
spectators.  
gathered  
nd every  
to swell  
s spoken  
s the son  
entence,  
ppause.  
, pulled  
streets.  
gs were  
an end

1, New  
eclara-  
n their  
eorge  
after-

# THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

145

wards cut into pieces, and run into bullets; for forty-two thousand of which it furnished material, thus providing a good supply of "melted majesty" to be poured into the redcoats and their allies. Of the Signers of the Declaration at least twelve, besides the Secretary, Charles Thomson, were Irish by birth or descent. These were—

JOHN HANCOCK, the President of Congress. It is stated by reliable authorities that the ancestors of President Hancock emigrated from near Downpatrick, Down county, Ireland, and settled in Boston\* towards the close of the seventeenth century. The "Hancocks have been for centuries actively and largely engaged in the foreign and domestic trade of Newry,"† and it was doubtless in a commercial capacity that the first of the name came to Boston. The family to which President Hancock belonged is, it is said, now represented in Ireland by John Hancock, of Lurgan, Down county, and by Neilson Hancock, the founder of the Irish Statistical Society.

John Hancock was born at Braintree, Mass., in 1737, and when quite young was left in the care of his father's brother, a wealthy merchant of Boston, who sent him soon after to Harvard College, where he was graduated in 1754. He then became a clerk in his uncle's office, and, going to England on business in 1761, made the acquaintance of several of the leading public men there. His uncle died in 1763, and left him great wealth, the largest fortune in

\* Tyrone (Ireland) Constitution, quoted in *Irish World* Centennial Number, 1876. The writer adds: "Those who are conversant with Reid's 'History of the Presbyterian Church in Ireland' are aware that multitudes of Protestants left Ulster for the plantations of North America, for causes sufficiently explained in that authority. John Hancock's ancestor was amongst that number."

† Article in *Pittsburg Leader*, quoted in *Irish World*. The name appears in the records of the Irish Parliament.



A.

rominent and  
representative  
Assembly of

he was not  
he claims of  
resbyterians,  
barn, built a  
erry streets,  
The first  
entered the  
on in 1730,\*  
Society in  
on of which  
Old State  
the Federal

ie methods  
njure and  
influence  
National  
e English  
overnment  
essel, the  
ontraband  
burned  
e fort in  
the an-  
of March  
resident  
also a

# THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

147

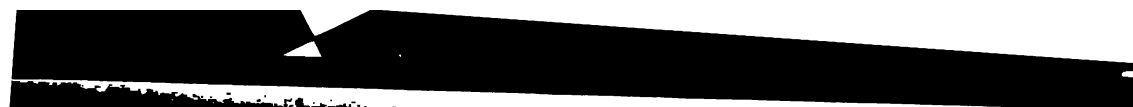
delegate to the Continental Congress, which met in September, at Philadelphia. On June 12, 1775, he was declared an "outlaw" by a proclamation of General Gage. In this document "martial law" was proclaimed; those in arms, and their friends, were declared "rebels, parricides of the Constitution," and a free pardon was offered to all who would return to their allegiance, except John Hancock and Samuel Adams.

Hancock was again a delegate to the Continental Congress in 1775, and when Randolph, the first President, resigned through ill health fourteen days after it had met, the Massachusetts "outlaw" was chosen to fill his place. On July 4, 1776, Hancock, as President of Congress, and Charles Thomson, of Maghera, as Secretary, signed the Declaration of Independence, when it was adopted, and with only their names attached to it, "was sent forth to the world," the other signatures not being affixed to the document until August the second following.

The illustrious "First Signer," on account of weakened health, resigned his seat in Congress, in 1777. In the year following, however, when Sullivan was preparing to attack the British on Rhode Island, Hancock hastened to his aid at the head of the militia of Massachusetts, and took part in the stirring events, near Bristol Ferry, in August, 1778.\* The year following he was elected Governor of Massachusetts, a position which he continued to hold for five consecutive years, when he declined a re-election. He was again chosen Governor in 1787, and re-elected annually until his death, which took place October 8, 1793.

WILLIAM WHIPPLE, of New Hampshire, was of Irish parentage. He was born in Kittery, Me., in 1730, and died at Portsmouth, N. H., November 28, 1785. Probably no

\* Lossing's Eminent Americans.



man in New Hampshire took a more decisive part as a member of the Assembly, against the encroachments of English tyranny, than William Whipple. Bold, determined, and full of integrity and honor, he denounced oppression without fear, and secured the passage of resolutions declaring the acts of George III. grievous and tyrannical. In that momentous crisis, when everything depended on the union of the different States, and it was of the highest importance that New Hampshire should take sides with her sister provinces, Whipple's voice was loud, and his appeals resistless for the right. It was owing to his influence, and that of Langdon and Thornton, that New Hampshire wheeled into the ranks with Massachusetts and Virginia, and consolidated forever the glorious union. The British government, which had subsisted ninety-five years in the State, was in this manner brought to an end. Elected to the Third Continental Congress in 1776, he was present when the Declaration of Independence was adopted, and was one of the distinguished patriots who signed that charter of liberty, pledging his life, his fortune, and his sacred honor in its support. The next year, 1777, opened with sad presages to the nation, and not the least of them was the invasion by Burgoyne, with 10,000 men, by way of Lake Champlain. The people of New Hampshire were foremost in this pressing emergency. The Committee of Safety at Exeter called together the assembly, and in three days decisive measures were taken for the defence of the country. The militia of the State was formed into two brigades. William Whipple was given the command of the first; John Stark commanded the second. A portion of each was ordered to proceed to the western frontier under the command of the latter. The remainder, under Whipple, remained in the State. He had his command.

marched for the seat of war. Whipple served with Gates, at the battles of Stillwater and Red Bank, doing good service in both, establishing his own reputation, and that of his troops for bravery and determination. The British general, hemmed in, surrounded, beyond measure, was forced to surrender. Whipple was stationed a short time at Ticonderoga. The following year he co-operated with General Sullivan in the siege of Fort Mifflin. Brave to a fault, his soldiers followed him to the death. Soon afterwards he received the appointment of financial reporter for the State of New Hampshire, which was bestowed on him by Congress. He filled this office from 1781 to 1784, when he resigned. The people of his native State, and this position he held to the end of his death. His last illness was short but distressing. He died before he had time to reap the fruits of the struggle which he had helped to gain, and to secure for the oppressed colonists a free people.

MATTHEW THORNTON, of New Hampshire, was born in Limerick county, Ireland, in 1714, and belonged to a family that had made itself formidable to oppressors. At an early age he emigrated to this country with his family, and settled in Connecticut. Here the young Irishman received a good education, and, selecting medicine for his profession, studied to make himself master of that branch of knowledge. Having acquired the requisite medical knowledge, Thornton removed to New Hampshire in 1747, and established himself at Londonderry. In 1775, when the British Government was dissolved in New Hampshire, a provincial convention formed for temporary purposes. Thornton was elected the president. The next year he was chosen a delegate to the Continental Congress, but was not present when the Declaration of Independence





that illustrious body, he placed his name to it on becoming a member, and his signature stands among those of the fifty-six patriots who have immortalized themselves by that act. In 1777 he was appointed a judge of the Superior Court of New Hampshire, in which office he remained till 1782. He had previously received the appointment of Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas. Judge Thornton's last years were spent in retirement. He preserved his intellectual vigor to the last, wrote political essays after eighty years of age, and died at the age of eighty-nine,\* at Newburyport, Mass.

ROBERT TREAT PAINE, of Massachusetts. According to very reliable authorities, Paine was of Irish descent. O'Hart tells us that "Henry O'Neill, of Dungannon, born in 1665, sixth in descent from Shane the Proud, Prince of Ulster, and cousin of Sir Neal O'Neill, who was killed at the battle of the Boyne, changed his name to Paine, which was that of a maternal ancestor, after the surrender of Limerick, in order to preserve a portion of his estates. He entered the British army, obtained grants of land in Cork county and other parts of Ireland, and was killed in 1698 at Foxford, in Mayo. His youngest brother, Robert, who also took the name of Paine, emigrated to America a little before the occurrence alluded to. He was the grandfather of Robert Treat Paine,"† the signer of the Declaration, who was born at Boston, March 11, 1731. He graduated at Harvard, where he studied theology in 1749, and acted as chaplain in 1755, of the Provincial troops on the northern frontier. A little later he visited Europe, and on his return studied law, settling, in 1759, at Taunton, Mass., where he remained for several years.

\* Carleton's New Hampshire Worthies.  
† Irish Pedigrees.

He was one of the delegates in 1768 to the convention called by prominent men in Boston, when Governor Bernard dissolved the General Court, for refusing to rescind the circular letter sent to the other colonies.

He conducted the prosecution of the English Captain, Preston, and eight of his soldiers, when they were tried for their murderous work in the "Boston Massacre," of March 5, 1770. In 1773 and the year following, he was elected to the General Assembly of Massachusetts, and was sent as a delegate to the Continental Congress, from 1774 to 1778, voting for, and signing, the Declaration of Independence. When, in 1780, the State Constitution of Massachusetts was adopted, he was made attorney-general, which office he held until 1790, when he became a judge of the Supreme Court. In 1804, he resigned his position, on account of deafness, and other infirmities of age, and died in 1814, at the age of eighty-three. O'Hart says that beside Henry and Robert O'Neill—Paine's ancestors—there were two other brothers, Brian and John, who went to France after Sarsfield's surrender, and finally settled in Portugal. Eight of their descendants, in 1807, when the French invaded the last-named country, went with the royal family of Braganza to Brazil, where many of their offspring are now to be found.\*

JAMES SMITH, of Pennsylvania. James Smith was born in Ireland in the year 1713, and came from thence with his father to America while yet a young man. They settled on the Susquehanna river, nearly opposite Columbia. Young Smith was very fond of mathematics, and became an expert surveyor. He also studied and practised law in Lancaster. He was an educated, refined, and religious man. At the time of the Revolution he was a resident of

\* Irish Pedigrees.



York, and extensively engaged in iron works. The first step taken in Pennsylvania, relative to the existing oppressions, was the assembling of a convention of delegates from each county in order to ascertain the feelings of the people generally, regarding the course proposed by the people of Massachusetts, where the Revolutionary storm had already commenced. Of this convention Smith was a delegate, and was one of the committee that prepared the instructions to the members of the next General Assembly of the province, recommending, among other things, the appointing of delegates to the General Congress convened at Philadelphia. So fully convinced was Smith of the issue, between the colonies and England, that on his return home he at once raised a company of volunteers, and was immediately elected its captain by acclamation. *This was the first company raised in the State of Pennsylvania to defend American liberty and resist English oppression.* This company was organized nine months before the first blood was shed at Lexington, and showed the deep thought, penetration, and sagacious foresight of its projector. He introduced thorough discipline in the corps, and imparted to its members the same holy fire of patriotism that was illuminating his own soul. Around this military nucleus, patriots gathered until it formed a regiment. Smith was then elected colonel. He was a member of the convention that met in Philadelphia in 1775. He was one of the first to raise his voice for independence, to oppose force by force, and peril life for freedom. He was then called an ultra Whig, and considered as treating the government with disrespect. His patriotism had carried him six months in advance of the leading men, and no one could outstrip him in the cause of justice and freedom. He desired action, and his time soon arrived.

man was better calculated to render efficient aid in important business. He prepared, and with the aid of Congress published, an address to the volunteer yeomen military of Pennsylvania, urging them around the standard of liberty. Smith inspired them with his own ardent patriotism, and the call, "Liberty or Death," resounded over the land. As soon as he took his seat in the Continental Congress, he immediately enrolled himself with the apostles of liberty upon the chart of freedom. He declined a re-election to Congress, from illness. His constituents insisted, and so he continued his labors with unabated zeal. So devoted was he in the cause of his adopted country that, when Congress was called to fly to York, his place of residence, he closed his doors against his clients and gave it up to the board of war. He sacrificed every private consideration for what he deemed to promote the public good. He was a great friend of Washington, Franklin, Adams; and all the patriots of the Revolution loved and honored James Smith. He died the 11th July, 1806. Not one of all the patriots of the English oppression or loved liberty more than he. He is the man, who sleeps in the land he helped to free.

GEORGE TAYLOR, of Pennsylvania, was born in the year 1716. At an early age he was put to school, a physician to study medicine, but, not liking to study, he ran away from home without consulting his father, and without a penny in his pocket. Finding a vessel bound for Philadelphia, he entered on board as a cabin boy. "In colonial days it was not an infrequent occurrence for persons leaving Europe, and Ireland to engage their services to those who would pay their passage to the country, hence they were called "redemptors."

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

lived in America, his passage was paid by Mr. Durham, Bucks county, Pa., for which he felt as a common laborer for a term of years. He was the owner of iron works where he lived, and his new servant the station of "filler," his duty being to throw coals into the furnace when iron was found the work to differ widely from handling the pen. His hands became cruelly blisters from the heat of the furnace, but he was so resolute and ambitious of gaining the approval of all around him, he persevered without a complaint. His workmen, observing his condition, named him "the iron horse," and his humanity induced him to seek less laborious employment for the young man. In conversing with him he discovered his intelligence, and talents, and immediately promoted him to the position of clerk in the counting-room of the establishment, and he was found fully competent for his new position, and the friendship of all around him. Nor did he neglect the improvement of his mind. He applied to practical uses the mathematics he had learned at school. He became a student of the sciences, and admired for his correct deportment, and admired for his reception and soundness of judgment. To his importance in society, the wife of Mr. Savage was attached, and was subsequently married to Mr. Savage. He became sole proprietor of a large property, and was a husband of a worthy and influential woman. He was favorably known, and, having the confidence of the fellow-citizens, he was by them elected, in 1775, to the Provincial Assembly at Philadelphia, and took part in its deliberations. He was a republican, and a hater of oppression by instinct. He had the freeman's eye to the increasing advance of slavery. He was too patriotic and too bold to support the yoke of bondage. In 1775 he was



was also President of the Convention that formed the first Constitution of Delaware in 1776, and a member of her Assembly constantly for twelve successive years after his first election. A part of this time he was Vice-President of his State, and in the autumn of 1777, when President McKinly fell into the hands of the enemy, Read was called from Congress to perform the duties of chief magistrate. On his way home with his family he was compelled to pass through Jersey, and in crossing the Delaware at Salem, his boat was discovered by the British fleet then lying just below. An armed barge was sent in pursuit. Read's boat stuck fast in the mud, and was soon come up to. By effacing the marks on his baggage during a few brief moments before he was boarded, and having with him his wife and children, he convinced those from the fleet that he was a countryman on his way to his farm, and solicited their assistance to put him ashore. They promptly afforded their aid, took his load out of the boat, and landed him and his precious charge on the Delaware side of the river. The perfect and open calmness of himself and wife saved them from the horrors of a prison-ship, and probably him from an exhibition on the yard-arm of a man-of-war. In the midst of all the perils of the Revolution he stood firm, and never doubted the final overthrow of English power in the colonies. From the moment the first gun was fired until he wrote his name on the Declaration, and from that until his death, he was always the true patriot and soldier. He was a talented, virtuous, and just man, and enjoyed the esteem and gratitude of his countrymen. This distinguished Irish-American died in the year 1798.

THOMAS MCKEAN, of Delaware. William McKean, the father of Thomas, emigrated from Ireland in the beginning of the last century, and settled in Chester county, Pennsylvania, where the signer was born on the 19th of March,

1734. His father placed him at an early age in the tuition of the Rev. Francis Allison, then principal of the most celebrated seminaries in the province, a man of profound science and erudition. He was a lawyer, and for many years followed that profession in his native place. In 1762 he was elected a member of the Delaware Assembly from Newcastle county, and remained in that station for eleven successive years. So attached to him were the people of that county that they continued to elect him for six succeeding years after his removal, although he necessarily declined the honor of serving. He was claimed by Delaware and Pennsylvania as a favorite son of each. In 1765 he was a member of the Delaware, of the Congress of New York. He was appointed Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, and a prominent member of the Continental Congress that convened at Philadelphia. From that time until the peace of 1783 he was a member of Congress, and one that served the whole time. He was a strong supporter of the Declaration of Independence, and most nobly affixed his signature to that instrument. When the time for final action, so anxious was he that it should be taken unanimously, that he sent an express after Caesar Rodney, one of his colleagues, the other showing an unwillingness to take the decisive step at that time. Mr. Rodney arrived on the 4th of July, just in time to give his vote for the immortal measure, and thus secured its adoption. So devoted was McKean to the cause of liberty, and nobly espoused, that he accepted a colonel's commission, and was appointed to the command of a regiment of militia in Philadelphia, and marched to the support of Washington. On the 20th of July, 1781, McKean was elected a member of Congress, and, on the surrender of Cornwallis, he dispatched a courier to carry the news to

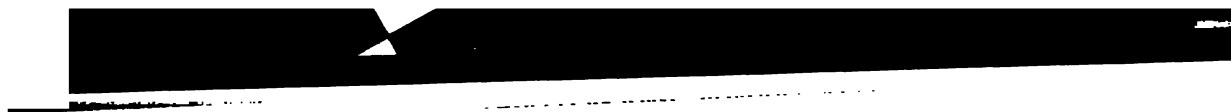




was in bed when the messenger arrived, but at once arose, and presently the glad tidings were made known throughout the city; the watchmen proclaimed the hour, adding "*and Cornwallis is taken.*" After the independence of our country was firmly established, and the last red-coat had left our shores, McKean retired from public life and took up his residence in Philadelphia, where he died on the 24th of June, 1817.

CHARLES CARROLL, of Carrollton. "Carroll," said Samuel Chase in 1772, "we have the better of our opponents, we have completely written them down." "And do you think that writing will settle the question between England and us?" asked Mr. Carroll. "To be sure," replied Chase, "what else can we resort to?" "The bayonet," replied Carroll, and his words were prophetic. Charles Carroll, of Carrollton, was born at Annapolis, Maryland, on the 20th of September, 1737. His grandfather, Charles Carroll, of King's county, Ireland, emigrated to America, about 1680. Belonging to a strict Catholic family, Charles, at an early age, was placed at the Jesuit College of Bohemia, a secluded spot on the eastern shore of Maryland. At the same time and place his cousin, John Carroll, afterward the first Archbishop of America, pursued his minor studies preparatory to entering the European colleges. From thence the two youths proceeded to France to finish their collegiate course in the college of St. Louis le Grand. At the age of twenty-seven the signer returned to his native land. In 1776 he, with his cousin John, then a Jesuit Father, Benjamin Franklin, and Samuel Chase, were deputed by Congress to go on a mission to Canada, the object being to win over the Canadians to the Colonial cause. The mission proved a partial success, and the patriots returned to Philadelphia just at the moment when Congress was wavering on the question of promulgating

the immortal Declaration. Charles Carroll supported strenuously, and on the memorable day when the delegates walked up the aisle to affix their signatures to that imperishable document, Charles was asked by John Hancock would he sign. "Most willingly," said he, and went with the rest to stake by larger personal interests than any man present: for not even excepting Boston's merchant prince, he was the richest of all the delegates. As he took up the pen to sign, a bystander remarked, in words to which all mentally assented: "There go millions." But having suggested that there were so many Charles the British legislators would have some difficulty in finding the right one, Mr. Carroll immediately dashed off expressive words which have ever since been applied to his name, whether written or spoken—words which distinguish him by the generous import they convey. "He continued in Congress until 1777, when the alliance with France assured the success of the American cause." Charles Carroll was one of the patriots that ever America produced. Years before the Revolution his genius and energies were employed in opposing the tyrannical acts of the British government. He wrote articles, under the signature of the "Sentinel," against the right of the government to regulate trade by proclamation. When a Mr. Stewart, a friend, carried tea into Annapolis, contrary to the known regulations of the convention, he declined to interfere between Mr. Stewart and the excited people. "My advice is," said he, "set fire to the vessel and burn her with the tea on her, to the water's edge," an advice that was immediately complied with. Mr. Carroll held various offices in the government during and after the war. In 1789 he was elected United States Senator, from Maryland.



and went at  
in a delegate  
omped him  
ernor of Vir-  
is successor.  
te, he placed  
ho was then  
ued in this  
own, making  
ing, himself,  
rs raised by  
d be shelled  
Soon after  
private life  
ing his last  
town, and

John Rut-  
l, and emi-  
eldest son  
of the first  
he United  
eclaration,  
youngest  
irth, leav-  
ery intelli-  
ulded and  
ceiving a  
with his  
bar, and  
studies.  
ed emin-  
s always  
It was

evident that talents like his were well calculated to promote the cause of independence, and he was among the first elected members to the Continental Congress in 1774, and was re-elected in 1775 and 1776, signing the Declaration with his colleagues on August 2 of the latter year. This alone was sufficient to place him on the roll of imperishable fame. The Revolution found him on the side of liberty, and during the years it lasted, Rutledge, with voice, and pen, and sword, resisted the assaults of tyranny. After the disastrous battle of Long Island, in 1776, Lord Howe, thinking the Americans were awed by the power of England, and despairing of their cause, offered to treat with the "rebels," not doubting but they would submit to whatever terms he chose to propose. Edward Rutledge, Benjamin Franklin, and John Adams were the committee sent to wait upon him. During the whole of the doubtful and protracted struggle, Rutledge remained its powerful and zealous advocate, and gave his best exertions in its behalf. As a sound, judicious statesman he ranked high, as an orator he was regarded as the most eloquent in the Continental Congress, and as a soldier his courage was unquestionable. On account of ill health, as well as because of the disturbed condition of South Carolina, he withdrew from Congress in 1777, but was returned again in 1779. During the investment of Charleston, in 1780, he was given command of a battery of artillery, by his brother John, then Governor, and displayed great bravery in his efforts to succor Gen. Lincoln, who commanded in the city. He was, however, taken prisoner, and was sent to St. Augustine, Florida, where he was kept in durance for nearly a year before his exchange was effected. After the evacuation of Charleston by the British, in 1781, he found himself unable, on account of the debilitated state to which he had been reduced by his imprisonment, to continue his previous active career;



called for aid, he raised a volunteer corps, and went at their head to join Washington. He was again a delegate to Congress in 1779, but sickness once more compelled him to withdraw. When Jefferson's term as Governor of Virginia expired in 1781, Nelson was chosen his successor. As commander-in-chief of the forces of his State, he placed himself at their head, and joined Lafayette, who was then endeavoring to check Cornwallis. He continued in this capacity until the British surrendered at Yorktown, making constantly great personal sacrifices, guaranteeing, himself, the payment of a loan of two million dollars raised by Virginia, and insisting that his own house should be shelled and ruined, because the British occupied it. Soon after the surrender he resigned, and remained in private life until his death, which took place in 1789. During his last years he lived, alternately, at his house at Yorktown, and on his estate at Offly.

EDWARD RUTLEDGE, of South Carolina. Dr. John Rutledge, father of Edward, was a native of Ireland, and emigrated to America in 1735, bringing with him his eldest son John, afterwards a member, with his brother, of the first Continental Congress, and later Chief-Justice of the United States. Edward, whose name is attached to the Declaration, was born in Charleston, S. C., in 1749, and was the youngest of seven children. His father died soon after his birth, leaving him to his mother's care, and she, being a very intelligent woman and imbued with republican ideas, moulded and fostered them in the mind of her son. After receiving a good education, he commenced the study of law with his elder brother, who stood high at the Charleston bar, and who sent him to London to complete his legal studies. He returned in 1772, and soon acquired a merited eminence as a bold, discreet and able advocate, and was always ready to enter the arena when duty called him. It was

evident that talents like his were well calculated to the cause of independence, and he was among elected members to the Continental Congress in 1774, was re-elected in 1775 and 1776, signing the Declaration with his colleagues on August 2 of the latter year alone was sufficient to place him on the roll of immortal fame. The Revolution found him on the side of liberty, and during the years it lasted, Rutledge, with pen, and sword, resisted the assaults of tyrannical power, and despising the assaults of tyrannical power, thinking the Americans were awed by the power of the British, and despairing of their cause, offered to treat "rebels," not doubting but they would submit to terms he chose to propose. Edward Rutledge, Franklin, and John Adams were the committee set upon him. During the whole of the doubtful and struggle, Rutledge remained its powerful and zealous advocate, and gave his best exertions in its behalf. As a judicious statesman he ranked high, as an orator he was regarded as the most eloquent in the Continental Congress, and as a soldier his courage was unquestionable. On account of ill health, as well as because of the distribution of South Carolina, he withdrew from Congress in 1777, but was returned again in 1779. During his absence from Charleston, in 1780, he was given command of a battery of artillery, by his brother John, then in the city, and displayed great bravery in his efforts to sustain the city. He was taken prisoner, and was sent to St. Augustine, where he was kept in durance for nearly a year, until an exchange was effected. After the evacuation of Charleston by the British, in 1781, he found himself unable, on account of the debilitated state to which he had been reduced by his imprisonment, to continue his previous ac-

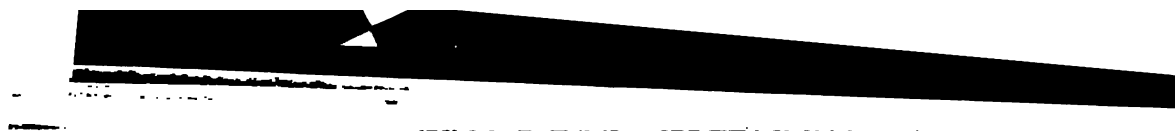


and resumed the practice of his profession. Some years later, he was called on to enter the Legislature of his State, where he rendered good service, and displayed his aversion to the slave trade. He was elected, in 1794, to the United States Senate, and four years later was made Governor of South Carolina, which position he filled at the time of his death, which took place in January, 1800.

THOMAS LYNCH, of South Carolina. The grandfather of Lynch came from the province of Connaught—and according to the most popular belief, from the city of Galway—and settled on the banks of the North Santee river, in what was known later as Prince George's parish, about the beginning of the last century. By unremitting industry he gradually acquired considerable wealth, and at his death left to his son, Thomas, a valuable estate. The latter, known as Thomas Lynch, Sr., was a man of great influence, and so highly esteemed that he was elected a delegate to the first Continental Congress, which met at Philadelphia in 1774. His son, Thomas Lynch, Jr., was born in 1749, and after having received a good academical education, at Georgetown, S. C., was sent to England to pursue his studies further.\* He took a degree at Cambridge, and afterwards entered on the study of the law, in one of the inns of the Temple, where he acquired a thorough knowledge of the profession. Becoming acquainted with some

\* It was usual at that period to send American youths, especially those intended for the legal profession, to Europe, to complete their education. Their sojourn in England did not, however, in most cases, have the effect of making them more favorably disposed towards the British government. It may be added that several of the most distinguished Irish Patriots were, when young, sent to pursue their studies at English Universities and schools, but instead of being rendered more loyal thereby, they became the most inveterate and determined opponents of British rule in Ireland.

of the leading British Whigs while there, he obtained knowledge of the designs of the Ministry in regard to the Colonies, and returned home, in 1772, determined to thwart them as far as lay in his power, and to strike if possible, for liberty. His views and purposes were fostered and encouraged by his patriotic father, and resorted to by the people of his parish. The first attempt of Lynch at public speaking was at a meeting in Charleston, 1773. His father had just addressed the assembly on the subject of English oppression, amid the applause of his fellow-citizens. As he sat down his youth rose. A profound silence ensued. A thousand eyes turned upon him. For a moment he paused, but a burst of eloquence followed, that carried the flame of patriotism to the hearts of his astonished and delighted audience with irresistible force. Tears of joy ran down the furrowed cheeks of his father, and loud bursts of applause greeted the two patriots. When the first provincial regiment was raised in South Carolina, in 1775, young Lynch accepted a captain's commission in it, saying to his father, who desired to see him enter the service with high rank, that the commission was quite as important as his rank, and would warrant him in receiving it. Along with his father—afterwards General—Pinckney, he made a tour through North Carolina, for the purpose of raising men for the regiment alluded to; but while performing this duty, he suffered severely from the inclemency of the weather, and his constitution received a shock from which it never fully recovered. About this time, his father, through illness, resigned his seat in Congress, but had the satisfaction of seeing his son elected to replace him. In October, 1776, Franklin, Lynch and Harrison (father of President John Adams), were sent as a committee from Congress to confer with Washington, then in camp at Cambridge, in re-





a new organization of the army, and also with respect to future operations, and they discharged the duty intrusted to them with credit to themselves and advantage to the national cause. Lynch signed the Declaration of Independence with his colleagues, August 2, 1776. The serious illness of his father, who had remained in Philadelphia, and his own increasing weakness, however, compelled him to resign soon after. Both set out on the return journey, but on the way back, the parent was stricken with paralysis, and died at Annapolis, Maryland. The son's health, after his return to South Carolina, failed slowly but steadily, and his physicians at length urged him, as a last resource, to spend some time in the south of Europe, the climate of which they hoped might benefit him. He accordingly sailed, accompanied by his devoted wife, in 1779, for the West Indies, hoping to find a neutral vessel there in which he might embark for Europe, and so escape the risk of being captured by the British. The ship, unfortunately, never reached her destination. She was supposed to have foundered at sea, for no tidings were ever heard from her after she had been a few days out of port. Thus died, at the early age of thirty, one of the truest and bravest of the founders of the Republic.

CHARLES THOMSON, "perpetual secretary" of Congress. Charles Thomson was born at Maghera, Derry county, Ireland, in 1730, and at the age of eleven, was brought to America, along with three other brothers, by his father. The latter died when within sight of the capes of the Delaware, and the boys were left to their own resources. An elder brother, however, who had arrived some years before, did what he could for them, and through his aid, Charles secured admission to the seminary of Dr. Francis Allison, an eminent Irish professor, who taught for a time at New London, Chester county, and afterwards at Philadelphia,

and by whom several of the revolutionary leaders were educated. At Dr. Allison's establishment, young Thomson made so much progress in his studies that he was many years deemed competent to undertake the management of a Friends' Academy, at Newcastle, Delaware, his methods of instruction giving great satisfaction. At an early period in the controversy between Britain and the Colonies, Thomson became known as an ardent advocate of the people's rights. His opinions and the arguments with which he supported them, had great weight, and his integrity and good judgment were unquestioned. Delaware Indians adopted him, and conferred on him the title of "The man of truth," a strict regard for which he maintained through life, so that, according to Robert Green, it was a popular mode of vouching for the truth of anything to say, "It is as true as if Charles Thomson's name were to it."

He was intensely earnest in his efforts against British despotism, and on one occasion, it is said, that he was while hotly engaged in discussing the proper course to be pursued, in order to aid the people of Boston—attending at the Coffee-house in Philadelphia where Dr. Mifflin, Reed, and others also spoke. Nor did he neglect his exertions to the city. On pretence of making a summer tour, he and another patriot traveled through the rural districts, seeking to stir up the feelings of the people, and to test their disposition in the event of revolution.\* John Adams spoke of him as "The Adams of Philadelphia—*The life of the cause of Liberty*." When the first Continental Congress met, in September, 1774, he was unanimously chosen Secretary, and held that position until his resignation in 1789. He was

\* Watson's Annals of Philadelphia.



ceive no pay for his first year's services, and Congress presented his wife, the aunt of President Harrison, with a silver urn as a mark of its appreciation of his unselfish patriotism. He made copious notes of the proceedings of Congress and the progress of the Revolution, and after retiring from public life prepared a history of his own times, but his natural kindliness of heart prevented him from publishing it. A short time before his death, he destroyed the manuscript, assigning as a reason that he was unwilling to blast the reputation of families rising into repute by placing on record the want of patriotism of their progenitors during the war. As a literary man his abilities were of the highest order, and his writings were spoken of in terms of warmest praise by eminent Europeans, as well as by Americans. He died in August, 1824, in the ninety-fifth year of his age, at Lower Merion, Montgomery county, Pennsylvania. In 1830, his nephew removed his remains to Laurel Hill Cemetery, where a beautiful monument was placed over them, bearing an appropriate inscription, which was written by J. F. Watson, author of the *Annals of Philadelphia*. The Abbe Claude C. Robin, chaplain in the French army, thus describes his appearance when he came, with other patriots, to greet Count Rochambeau: "Among others Charles Thomson, Secretary of Congress, the soul of that political body, came to receive and present his compliments. His meager figure (he was about six feet high) furrowed countenance, his hollow, sparkling eyes, his white straight hair, that did not hang quite so low as his ears, fixed our thorough attention, and filled us with surprise and admiration." Only his signature, besides that of President Hancock was affixed to the Declaration, July the Fourth, 1776.

Philadelphia, and of the famous "First Troop of Cavalry" of that city, who published the first daily paper issued in the United States, held the position of printer to Congress and was the first who printed the Declaration. An Irishman, Charles Thomson, first prepared this important document for publication, from the draft of Jefferson. Another Irishman, Colonel Nixon, had the honor of publicly reading it to the people from the State House. Another Irishman, Captain Dunlap, first printed and published it to the world.\*\*

It may be added here that Alderman John B. Stetson, of Philadelphia, a native of Dublin and a United Irishman, in 1815 published the Declaration, with fac-similes of the signers' autographs, at his own expense, for the first time, and received the thanks of John Quincy Adams, Lafayette, and other eminent men for his patriotic and valuable service.

\* Account of Friendly Sons of St. Patrick, Philadelphia.

[REDACTED]

## RACE IN AMERICA.

### TER XIII.

#### WAR OF INDEPENDENCE.

een driven from Boston, they  
at New York and Charleston.  
ed to offer the best chances of  
e British fleet under Admiral  
eral Clinton, and nearly three  
uthward, and anchored near  
elow the city, at the entrance  
utledge, brother of Edward,  
nd,\* who had been a short

In his *Lives of Eminent Ameri-*  
ity in South Carolina, during the  
ther in civil authority or as general  
was a native of Ireland, and came  
ohn Rutledge, in 1735. He was  
his adopted State, in the first Con-  
Edward as one of his colleagues.  
il government of South Carolina  
stitution was framed, Rutledge  
and commander-in-chief of its  
nation, Charleston was prepared  
and Parker, and the enemy was  
rrior under the new constitution,  
torial powers by the legislature.  
itia, and managed both civil and  
y, until after the fall of Charles-  
the southern partisan leaders,  
sea-board, in 1781, Rutledge  
onborough, and thoroughly re-

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

171

time before elected President, and commander-in-chief of South Carolina, was ready to meet the invaders. He had caused over a hundred pieces of artillery to be mounted in the best positions, around the harbor, had summoned the militia of the State to arms, and made whatever preparations were possible for the expected struggle. Gen. Charles Lee was sent down by Washington, to aid in the defense of the city, and under him were Armstrong, Gadsden, Moultrie, and Thomson, the last named a nephew of the Irish Secretary of Congress.\* Thomson's troops were chiefly riflemen, and to him was confided the command of the advanced post on the east end of Sullivan's Island,

established civil government. After the war he was made judge of the Court of Chancery. He was a member of the convention that framed the constitution of the United States; and in 1789, was elevated to the bench of the Supreme Court of the Republic, as associate justice. He was appointed Chief Justice of South Carolina in 1791; and in 1796 he was called to the duties of Chief Justice of the United States. In every official station he displayed equal energy and sterling integrity; and while yet bearing the robes of the highest judicial office in the Republic, he was summoned from earth. His death occurred in July, 1800, when he was about seventy years of age."

\* General William Thomson was a brother of Charles Thomson, the secretary of Congress, and born, three years before the latter, at Maghera, Derry county, Ireland. Soon after arriving in America, at which time he was only fourteen years old, some friends of the family brought him to South Carolina. When the Revolution broke out he was placed in command of the third regiment of South Carolina, known as the "Rangers," and fought at its head at Charleston in 1776. He also served with Howe in Georgia, and was engaged with his command on the attack of Savannah under D'Estaing and Lincoln. He displayed great bravery, and suffered much during the war, retiring at its close to his estate at Belleville "with shattered health and fortune." There he remained engaged in the occupation of an indigo planter until 1796, when, seeking to benefit his declining health by a visit to mineral springs in Virginia, he died during his stay there.



batteries. On June 2d, at Fort Sullivan (now named on Thomson. The day over twenty-six hundred guns and a few among the best marks-English flotilla to appear opened a destructive small arms. Several every time the sure from the boats, and design."\* The British next morning, but the hot volleys that he his batteries." This Americans and a British full of exultation at es turned their bows During this engage-; afterwards killed at a act of remarkable in "the western bas-flag of South Carolina frigate, and the rang over the paraded up the flag, he midst of the iron cheers greeted him aped unhurt within le, Governor Rutledge, his daring fellow-

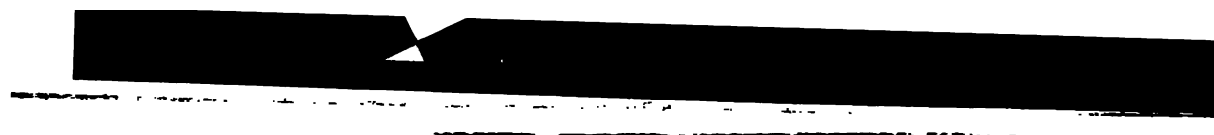
li., p. 549.

countryman with his own sword, offering him at the same time, a lieutenant's commission; but the young hero, as modest as he was brave, declined the well-deserved promotion, saying, "I am but a sergeant."\* The thanks of Congress were, on the twentieth of July, tendered to Lee, Moultrie, and Thomson, and the officers and men under their command, for their gallant and successful defence of Charleston.

Toward the end of June, Howe sailed from Halifax—whither he had gone when driven from Boston—for Staten Island. On the eighth of July, he landed there with over nine thousand men, and was soon reinforced by the arrival of several thousand more British regular and Hessians, and still later by Clinton and the vanquished and vengeful redcoats from Charleston. They were rendered still more vindictive by the news that the Declaration of Independence had been adopted and published, and that the statue of their king, George III., which stood in Bowling Green, had been pulled down and run into bullets, so that they

---

\* Sergeant William Jasper was born in Ireland and came to America while young. At the commencement of the Revolution he joined the patriots, and attaching himself to the Second South Carolina Regiment, soon became distinguished for his intrepidity. At the attack on Charleston, his bravery as well as modesty attracted the admiration of all. Refusing the offer of a commission tendered him by his countryman Governor Rutledge, he was detached on special duty by General Moultrie, with permission to select such men as he chose from his regiment to accompany him. On one occasion while engaged in this service, he with a single comrade, surprised eight British soldiers who were conveying some Americans to Savannah to be executed; released the prisoners, and brought the redcoats to the American camp at Purysburg. During the attack on Savannah, Oct. 9, 1779, Jasper lost his life while planting the colors of his regiment on the British works. One of the principal squares in that city perpetuates Jasper's name, and a splendid monument was recently erected there in his honor.





*THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.*

have "melted majesty" poured into them had expected that the British would first like themselves masters of Long Island, and the correctness of his judgment. Greene, led there with several thousand men, had the ground, and caused fortifications to be various points. He was unfortunately taken, who was unacquainted with the locality, his position, Putnam having the chief Americans numbered about nine thousand being raw men.

portion being raw men. A largely superior British force landed at Long Island, and prepared for an attack forward on the evening of the 26th, aided by American loyalists, they almost surrounded the patriot forces. Sullivan, perceiving his army, ordered a retreat to the fortification, but in endeavoring to effect this struggle ensued. "Hemmed in and engaged by British and Hessians, and driven from the field, the Americans for a time struggled bravely, but Sullivan and his ensnared men, were at length taken to hand with the enemy." In the struggle in Maryland and Pennsylvania, composed of British, Hessian, and American troops, the Americans, behaved with determined valor, but a large portion of their numbers was slaughtered. On the 26th, and Butler, with their regiments, fought the battle of Red Bank, from early morning until night; and from the 27th, the British moved from Greenwood Cemetery, to the Flatbush, and on the 28th, moved to Fort Greene, the bitter conflict was continued, surrounded by the English and Hessians, the British retreat cut off, and wearied and exhausted fighting all day, many succeeded

*THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.*

in leaving their way through the ranks of the enemy, all escaped to Fort Greene. Hundreds were slain in the fair, or drowned in Gowanus Creek, while those who fell into the hands of the English were sent to the loan some prison ships. Sullivan was captured and sent as prisoner to Lord Howe, as was also Lord Stirling. The loss of the Americans in this affair was nearly two thousand, that of the British only five hundred. Washington, apprehensive that the English fleet might try to cut off his troops in Brooklyn from communication with New York, ordered after consultation with his officers, the evacuation of Long Island. The movement took place on the night of August 29th, under his own supervision. The regiments of Sherman and McGaw, of the Pennsylvania Line, with the remnants of Haslet's and Smallwood's Marylanders, acting as covering party. It was executed with secrecy and dispatch and the commander-in-chief remained until all the troops had embarked for New York, and then crossed the river in the last boat of all.

Soon after it was decided to abandon New York, and on the thirteenth of September, the main body of the American army quitted the city.\*

\* Shortly after the battle of Long Island, and while Howe's fleet was in New York harbor, an attempt was made to destroy his flagship, the *Eagle*, by means of an "infernal machine" called a "marine turtle," the invention of a man named Bushnell, of Saybrook, Connecticut. This machine was capable of containing one man within it, and could be navigated by him under water. A small magazine of gunpowder with fastenings to attach it to a ship's bottom—was carried along with the "turtle." "This magazine," says Lossing, "was furnished with clockwork, constructed so as to operate a spring and communicate a blow to detonating powder and ignite the gunpowder of the magazine. The motion of this clockwork was sufficiently slow to allow the submarine operator to escape a safe distance after securing the magazine to a ship's bottom." Washington approved of the machine, and requested Ge-



In all the skirmishes and battles that ensued from that date until the army passed into Jersey, the Irish-Americans bore a prominent part. At East Chester, Hand defeated and drove back a Hessian regiment by a bayonet charge. At Throck's and Pell's Neck, the same general and his riflemen, in the very teeth of Howe, destroyed the bridge and drove the British general from the Causeway. At Fort Washington, McGaw, of the Pennsylvania Line, defended the place till one thousand redcoats and Hessians lay dead before the ramparts. Soon after Washington commenced his famous retreat through Jersey. So quickly did the victorious army of Howe advance upon Fort Lee, that the Americans were compelled to make a hasty retreat, leaving their tents, artillery, and provisions behind. For three weeks they retreated before Cornwallis, across the level districts of New Jersey. So near were pursuers and pursued all this time that the music of the British could be distinctly heard by the Americans. The term of service of many of the militia regiments had expired, and the men, refusing to re-enlist, left the ranks and returned home. Desertions were frequent, and when on the second of December, Washington crossed the Delaware, his army had dwindled down to scarcely three thousand men. Lee had been left behind at White Plains, in command of a detachment of nearly three thousand men, and Washington wrote to him requesting him to move immediately into New Jersey, to

Parsons to secure a competent man to manage it and destroy the *Eagle*. A young man named Lee was selected for the undertaking. He performed his duty with skill and coolness, got under the British vessel and remained there for two hours, on September 6, but found it impossible to penetrate the thick copper on her bottom in order to attack the magazine. He returned in safety, and received the congratulations of Washington and his officers for his daring. The commander-in-chief often employ

re-inforce his melting army. Lee paid no attention to the request of his chief, and it was evident that at the time of the battle of Monmouth, he had no other worthy designs. Sternly commanded by Washington to advance to his assistance, the Englishman commenced a tardy and reluctant march. So slow were his movements that three weeks elapsed before he reached Monmouth. Two days afterwards he was captured by the enemy. The van who had been exchanged a short time before, returned to the command of Lee's troops and soon formed a connection with the main body of the army on the banks of the Delaware.

When on that memorable Christmas night, 1783, Washington, with his band of patriots, crossed the Delaware, determined to make a dash on the Hessians, and by one bold deed raise up the sinking spirit of the country, the Irish were by his side. Sullivan, Knox, Ewing, and Hand were there, and out of Philadelphia, at the same moment, came Colonel Greene to march against Count Donop, to make a diversion from Washington, and keep Donop from aiding the British at Trenton. As in the gray of the morning, the British leaped upon the astonished Hessians at once, the cheers of Sullivan's men were heard from the heights of the town, as they, with the bayonet, drove the terrified and bewildered enemy before them. Rall, whose age and ferocity had fought against McGaw at the battle of Red Bank, was shot down at the head of his Hessians. The terrified mercenaries ran in the direction of Philadelphia. Hand was stationed on the Princeton road, and had not forgotten Brooklyn and the Flatbush. A volley greeted the flying fugitives and checked their flight. They threw down their arms and begged for mercy. When Washington recrossed the Delaware, he took

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

thousand prisoners, six pieces of artillery, a thousand stand of arms, and four colors captured in Trenton. The descendants of some of the Irish soldiers who crossed the Delaware with Washington are still living at Trenton.

The same men, a few days afterwards fought the battle of Princeton. Captain Moore, with a few men of the Princeton Militia, as brave as himself, made a dash, during the battle, at Nassau Hall, then filled with British troops, and commanded them to surrender. They did so, and he marched his prisoners, far out numbering his own men, to the American rear. Washington ordered Major Kelly, of the Pennsylvania Militia, to destroy the bridge over Stony Brook, near Princeton. With a handful of men he proceeded to the bridge, but no sooner had he begun to demolish it than the van of Cornwallis' army appeared before him. The enemy, perceiving his designs, opened on him with grape and round shot. In the face of this terrible fire Kelly maintained his ground, throwing the planks into the stream until the bridge was rendered impassable for artillery. He, however, fell into the hands of the British. While engaged in cutting away a log in which some of the timbers rested, it gave way and he tumbled into the stream. His men, supposing him to be drowned, started for Princeton, but he succeeded in getting out of the water, though his frozen clothes so impeded his progress, tired as he was, that the enemy came up with him and made him a prisoner.

In this engagement Washington was, for a time, in the most imminent danger. Mercer's men, disheartened by the fall of their leader, became confused. The commander-in-chief, perceiving this, rode up and called on them to stand fast. Custis then describes what followed. "The dis-

is between the adverse posts, as though he had there, a target for both. The arms of both. Can escape from death be possible? John (Washington's aid, who was just returning conveyed an order to another point), horror what seemed the impending death of his commander, dropped the reins upon his horse's neck, his hat over his face that he might not see the roar of musketry succeeds, and then a shout, shout of victory. The aid-de-camp ventures eyes. Oh, glorious sight; the enemy are breaking, while dimly amid the glimpses of the smoke, the chief, alive, unharmed, and without a wound, his hat and cheering his comrade, to the pursuit. Fitzgerald, celebrated as one of the finest of the American army, now dashed his rowels into the flanks, and heedless of the dead and dying in the side of his chief, exclaiming, "Thank God, the cellency is safe," and then the favorite aid, warm-hearted son of Erin, a man of thews and unused to the melting mood, gave loose to his emotions and wept like a child for joy. Washington amid scenes of the greatest excitement, grasped the hand of his aid and friend, and said, "Away, my dear colonel, and bring up the train, it is our own."\*

During the spring of 1777, eighteen new regiments were appointed by Congress, six of them

\* Custis' "Recollections of the Life and Character of Colonel Fitzgerald," says Mr. Custis, "was an Irishman, of the Blue and Buffs, the first volunteer company raised in the dawn of the Revolution, and commanded by Washington in the campaign of 1778, and retreat through the Jerseys, he was the commander-in-chief."

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

being Irish by birth or descent. These were Wayne, ("Mad Anthony"), Hand and Reed of Pennsylvania, George Clinton of New York, Poor of New Hampshire, and Conway, formerly of the Irish Brigade in the service of France.\* Moylan was given the command of a regi-

\* Major-General Wayne. "The elder Wayne came from Ireland to America in 1722," writes Armstrong, the American biographer, in his life of "Mad Anthony." Anthony was born on the 1st of January, 1745, in Chester County Pa., "and a better New Year's gift," says Headley, "fortune could not have presented to the nation." Sent to school at an early age to his uncle, he passed from thence to the Philadelphia Academy, where he remained till seventeen years old, devoting most of his time to mathematical studies. Having completed his education, he returned to his native place and opened a surveyor's office. He was sent to Nova Scotia in 1765, to locate a grant of land from the crown to several gentlemen in Philadelphia. They made Wayne superintendent of the settlement. This post he held until 1767, when he returned home, married a young lady in Philadelphia, and resumed his profession as surveyor. In 1773 he was appointed a representative to the Assembly of his State. He quitted the council for the field in 1775, where he was appointed a colonel in the Continental army, and went to Canada with Gen. Thomas. At the close of the campaign there in 1776, he was promoted to brigadier-general. He was with Washington at Germantown, Brandywine, Monmouth, in all of which engagements he was distinguished for his valor. The capture of Stony Point raised him to the highest mark in the admiration of his countrymen. In 1781, he went with the Pennsylvania Line to the South, and in Virginia co-operated with Lafayette. After the capture of Cornwallis, he was sent to conduct the war in Georgia, and was very successful. As a reward for his services, the legislature of Georgia made him a present of a valuable farm. He was a member of the Pennsylvania Convention that ratified the Federal Constitution. In 1792 he succeeded St. Clair in the command of the army to be employed against the Western Indians, and gained a victory over them in the battle of the Miamis, August, 1794. He concluded a treaty with the Indians in August, 1795. While engaged in the public service, and returning home from the West, he was seized with the gout, and died in a hut at Presque Isle, in December, 1796, aged 51 years. He was buried, at his own request, under the flag-staff of the fort on

ment of horse, at whose head he afterwards obtained victory in some of the most desperately contested battles of the war.

the shore of Lake Erie, from whence his remains were conveyed by his son, Colonel Isaac Wayne, to Radnor churchyard in Chester county. The venerable church near which the body of Wayne was erected in 1717. The Pennsylvania State Society of Friends caused a handsome monument to be erected over his remains. Wayne became a member of the Friendly Sons of St. John in Philadelphia in 1774, and took an active interest in the affairs of the State. Charles Clinton, father of Vice-President George Clinton, General James Clinton, was born in Longford county, Ireland. In 1729 he chartered a vessel to convey his family and a son to America. The captain formed the project of starving the crew with a view, it is said, to becoming master of their property. A son and daughter of Clinton's, as well as a number of the crew, died in consequence of the hardships of the voyage. In 1731 Charles Clinton founded a settlement in Orange county, New York. He was soon after made a county judge, and a lieutenant-colonel in the militia, serving in 1758 at the siege of Fort Mifflin (now Kingston), Canada. He died in 1773, at the age of 44 years. Two of his sons, Alexander and Charles, adopted the profession of medicine. The two others, James and George, rendered service to their country, and rose to positions of high honor and ability. James Clinton was the fourth son of Colonel Charles, and was born in 1736. He was appointed in 1756 an ensign in a regiment, from which rank he rose in 1758 to a lieutenant, and in 1763 he was elevated to the post of captain. In 1763 he was elevated to the post of captain of the four regiments raised to defend the western frontier of New York, and in 1774 he became lieutenant-colonel of the 1st regiment of militia in his native country. In the French war he distinguished himself by the capture of Fort Frontenac, and won a reputation for valor and military skill. At the close of the war he married Miss Witt, and retired to private life. When the Revolutionary war broke out he at once joined the patriots. Congress gave him the rank of colonel, and subsequently, in 1776, that of a brigadier. He attained the rank of major-general. Clinton served in the Canadian campaign under Montgomery; but his chief military act





Burgoyne the commander of the British forces, in Canada, at the head of a large army, including a number of Indians, compelled the Americans to evacuate Ticonder-

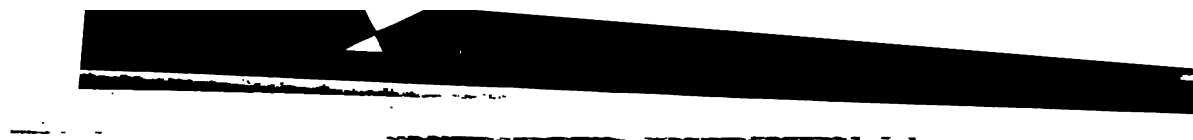
defence of Fort Clinton, on the Hudson, in October, 1777. His brother, Governor Clinton, as commander-in-chief, was at Fort Montgomery, its neighbor. The attack on these forts was part of a project devised by Sir Henry Clinton, to create a diversion in favor of Burgoyne, and open a passage to him. At the head of four thousand men, the British general advanced up the Hudson, and having surrounded Forts Clinton and Montgomery, made a desperate assault upon them. They were defended by only five hundred men, chiefly militia, who made a brave but unavailing effort to prevent their capture. In 1779, Clinton commanded a detachment of sixteen hundred men, which was sent to assist Sullivan in his expedition against the hostile Indians. Clinton was for some time in command of the northern department at Albany, was subsequently attached to the main army, and was present at the capture of Cornwallis. In later years he was one of the convention that formed the present Federal Constitution. His death took place in 1812, at Newburgh, N. Y. Vice-President George Clinton was the youngest son of Charles Clinton, and was born in 1739. When twenty years old he took part as a captain of militia in the attack on Fort Frontenac (Kingston). In 1768 he was elected to the Colonial Assembly, and in 1775 to the Continental Congress, where he voted in favor of the Declaration of Independence. He was made a brigadier-general in 1776, and in the year following was elected both Governor and Lieutenant-Governor of New York. He accepted the position of Governor, and by six successive elections was continued in that office for eighteen years. It was in a great measure to his efforts that the British in New York city were prevented from effecting a communication with Burgoyne. In 1788, Governor Clinton presided over the convention which met at Poughkeepsie to consider the adoption of the Federal Constitution. He received fifty electoral votes as a candidate for Vice-President when Washington was elected for the second term, and was, in 1801, again chosen Governor of New York. In 1804 he was elected Vice-President of the United States, receiving the same number of votes as was given Jefferson for the Presidency. He was again chosen Vice-President in 1808, Madison being elected President, and died while discharging the duties of his office at Washington in 1812. De Witt Clinton, Governor of New York, United States Senator, Mayor of New York, and projector and inaugurator of the Erie canal, was the

oga, early in July, 1777, and pushing forward in opposition, reached the banks of the Hudson

son of General James Clinton. He was born in 1769, thirty-three, after having filled various positions in the elected United States Senator from New York. He introduced in the New York Legislature a project of a canal from Lake Erie to the Hudson, and personally supported it. He met with all opposition saw with pride the completion of that great work. He was elected Governor of New York in 1816, and again died at Albany in 1828.

General Edward Hand was born at Clydaff, Kings County, Ireland, in 1744. After having served some time in the Irish army, he came to America and studied medicine at Lancaster, Pa. He sided with the patriots, he received a commission as lieutenant in a regiment of riflemen, mostly composed of his own countrymen, and served at the siege of Boston. In March, 1776, he was made colonel, and led his regiment at the battles of Long Island and Red Bank. Soon after he was made brigadier-general, and commanded at Albany, in October, 1778. He took part in the expedition against the Indians of western New York, and in the movements of the war, and after its close was elected brigadier-general in 1784. His name is affixed to the Pennsylvania Constitution. In 1798, when Washington accepted the command of the army, the prospect of a foreign war made it advisable to raise an appreciation of Hands' soldierly qualities by recommending him to the position of adjutant-general. This brave Irish-American died at Rockford, Lancaster county, Pa., in 1802.

General Enoch Poor was a native of New Hampshire. He served as a colonel in the Continental army during the war in Canada in 1776, and afterwards at Crown Point. He was made brigadier-general in 1777, and took part in the battles of the Clouds and the surrender of Burgoyne. He soon after joined Washington's army in Pennsylvania; was with his command at Valley Forge, and participated in the pursuit of the British on their retreat from Philadelphia to the battle of Monmouth which followed. He died in 1786. N. J., his funeral being attended by Washington and General Poor was greatly esteemed by the latter, who, according to tradition, "was much affected when visiting his grave, when it was opened in 1825."



Edward, on the 30th of that month. His progress excited great apprehensions among the people of the North: the whole frontier of Massachusetts and New Hampshire, was uncovered and there was no force available, fit to withstand the British. But the patriots did not lose heart. The New Hampshire Assembly was convened on three days' notice, and the Speaker, John Langdon—Sullivan's comrade in the attack on Fort William and Mary—addressing the body said, after offering almost all that he possessed for the public service, and urging prompt action, "Our old friend Stark, who so nobly sustained the honor of our State at Bunker Hill, may be safely intrusted with the conduct of the enterprise, and we will check Burgoyne."

The Assembly stirred to enthusiasm, at once proceeded with the work of preparation. The militia of the State was formed into two brigades. The first was placed under the command of William Whipple, one of the Irish American Signers of the Declaration, and the second under that of Stark. The latter was then a private citizen. He had commanded as Brigadier-General in the battles of Trenton and Princeton, and when the army went in winter quarters at Morristown, had returned to New Hampshire to raise recruits. When he learned, however, that Congress had passed him over in the appointment of general officers, he felt indignant at the slight, and resigned his commission. But now in the hour of trial and danger, he responded promptly, when called upon. He stipulated, however, that he should be held accountable only to the Assembly of New Hampshire, and that he should be allowed to act according to his own discretion, declining to place himself under the orders of General Lincoln, who had been sent by Schuyler, then in command of the Northern Department to take charge of the newly raised force.

Meanwhile Burgoyne, learning that the Americans had

accumulated considerable stores at Bennington, about twenty-four miles east of the Hudson, sent Colonel Baum, at the head of a strong force, on August 13th, to capture the place. On the same day Stark arrived at Bennington, and made preparations for defence. Baum having reconnoitered the American position, sent back to Burgoyne for large reinforcements, which were promptly dispatched to his assistance. The British forces, composed of English, Germans, Indians, and Tories, then proceeded to entrench themselves, and place their artillery in position. But the Americans became impatient, and their sentiment was voiced by Rev. Mr. Allen, of Pittsfield, a clergyman who had come with the Berkshire county contingent. Addressing the commander before daylight, on the morning of the 16th of August, he said, "General, the people of Berkshire, have been frequently called upon to fight, but have never been led against the enemy. If you do not now give them a chance, they have resolved never to turn out again." "Do you wish," asked Stark, "to march now while it is dark and raining?" "No, not just now," replied the minister. "Then," said the stern old Irish-American veteran, "if the Lord should once more give us sunshine, and I do not give you fighting enough, I'll never ask you to come out again."

Stark had already determined to attack the British, without delay, and when the sun came out early in the day, he formed his troops, and pointing to the enemy's works said, "See men, there are the redcoats. We must beat them to-day, or Molly Stark will be a widow." A very large proportion of those whom he addressed—perhaps the majority—had sprung from the same stock as himself, and his grimly humorous, and determined utterance, was responded to with a yell which "greatly alarmed the loyalists in their works below," and gave promise that the men of New Hampshire would do their whole duty, and that, as far as



it depended on their efforts, the estimable Mrs. Stark, would not be compelled to assume widow's weeds, for some time to come.

Two columns were then sent forward to assault the British works at different points, and as soon as the firing began, Stark threw himself in the saddle, and led the main body forward. The Americans rushed upon their enemies, drove them from the entrenchments, and pursued them across the Walloomscoick, where the struggle was renewed. The General in his report said, the battle "lasted two hours, and was the hottest I ever saw. It was like one continual clap of thunder." A British reinforcement which had been sent forward, arrived in time to meet the flying redcoats. They rallied, and again attempted to check the patriots' advance, but opportunely at this critical time a fresh American regiment came up and fell vigorously on them, again driving them back, and following them until dark, when Stark, ordered the pursuit to cease. "Another hour of daylight," said he, "and I would have captured the whole body." Over two hundred of the British were killed, including their commander Baum, many more wounded, and seven hundred made prisoners. Four pieces of artillery were captured, as well as several hundred stand of arms, and a quantity of military stores. The American loss was not over one hundred killed, and as many wounded. Stark's horse was killed under him, but he escaped unhurt himself. His victory startled and weakened Burgoyne, and gave fresh hope and confidence to the Nation's defenders.

"Nothing succeeds like success." When Congress was informed that Stark declined to obey the orders of Lincoln, it censured his conduct as "destructive of military subordination, and highly prejudicial to the common cause." After the victory of Bennington, however, it resolved "that

the thanks of Congress be presented to General Stark, the New Hampshire militia, and the officers under his command, for their brave and successful conduct upon, and signal victory over the enemy, in the battle of Bennington; and that Brigadier Stark, be appointed Brigadier-General in the army of the United States.

\* Journals of Congress, iii., 327.

Major-General John Stark was born in Londonderry, Ireland, 28, 1728. According to the New Hampshire Worthies, he was of Irish descent; his parents emigrated from Ireland to America in 1736 they removed to Derryfield, now Manchester, where he remained till he was twenty-four years old. In 1752 young Stark, on by his adventurous disposition, went on a hunting excursion into the wild regions of northern New Hampshire. Here he was captured by a party of the Abenaki Indians and carried into captivity, where he lay in captivity, when he was redeemed by a friend for the sum of one hundred and three dollars. The next year on another excursion to the head waters of the Androscoggin, as guide, hunter, and trapper, two more years of his life were spent. The old French war broke out, and longing for more to do, Stark threw himself into that struggle. When the news of Lexington reached him he was engaged at work in his home with indignation and a martial spirit he stopped for not more than a few minutes was on his way to Boston. Receiving a colonel's commission he availed himself of the enthusiasm of the day, and his energy and in two hours enlisted over eight hundred men. He fought at Medford, but on that eventful day when the storm of battle raged at Bunker Hill he was in the fight with his troops, and during that dreadful conflict he evinced that intrepid zeal and bravery which entitle him to honor and perpetual remembrance in the pages of history. The next year he went with his regiment to New York, where soon afterwards he joined our Northern army in the retreat from Canada. He took part in the disastrous battle of the Clouds, and had command of the body of troops who were fortifying the post of Mount Independence. We next found him at Trenton, where he shared largely in the glories of that brilliant engagement. In the battle of Princeton he stood by the side of Washington and exhibited all that daring and intrepidity so peculiar to the Irish race.



On September 14th, Burgoyne crossed the Hudson, and encamped at Saratoga. The American army was at Bemis Heights, only a few miles away. Gates held the chief command—having been ordered by Congress to supersede Schuyler and under him, amongst others were Generals Stark, Whipple, Poor, and Nixon, as well as Morgan and his dreaded Irish-American riflemen. An attack made by the British on September 19th, was repulsed with heavy loss, and in a second battle on October 7th, they suffered a crushing defeat. During this conflict, the British General Fraser, with a body of picked men, pushed forward to turn the left flank of the Americans. His movement was noticed, and Morgan with his riflemen along with the brigade of Poor and a part of Learned's brigade were sent forward to meet him. Morgan drove Fraser back, and then wheeled and fell on the right flank of the British, "with

which never failed to inspire his men with confidence and courage. The following March he resigned his commission and retired to his farm. Insulted by Congress, triumphed over by younger and less able men, justice and self-respect impelled him to this course. But his patriotism still remained burning with undiminished vigor, and when Burgoyne came marching down from Canada, all was forgotten, and he took the most active measures in recruiting troops. Rallying around their favorite leader, the militia came pouring from all directions, and at the head of 1,400 men he marched upon the enemy and came up with them at Bennington. Here Stark reached the climax of his fame, by a glorious victory achieved over the British. The whole country hailed with joy, and the dark clouds were dispelled, which had rested like an incubus upon the land. He participated in the honors of Saratoga, and assisted in the council which arranged the surrender of Burgoyne. He also served in Rhode Island in 1778, and in New Jersey in 1780. In 1781 he was appointed Commander-in-Chief of the Northern department of the American army, and made Saratoga his headquarters. The two following years, though engaged in no battle, his duties were complicated and onerous, nor did he relinquish his valuable services till he could greet his native country as an independent nation."

such appalling force and impetuosity that their ranks were at once thrown into confusion." He ordered his riflemen to aim particularly at the English officers, in accordance with the usual custom in the American army, and one of them, Timothy Murphy, hit and mortally wounded Fraser. Some people have seen fit to censure the American commanders for requiring their men to direct their fire upon the British commissioned officers, rather than upon the privates, and have censured Morgan for having given the order referred to. But as Lossing says,\* many "who gloat over the horrid details of the slaying of thousands of humble rank-and-filemen, as deeds worthy of a shout for glory, and drop no tear for the slaughtered ones, affect to shudder at such a cold-blooded murder of an officer, (the killing of Fraser), upon the battle field. \* \* \* \* \* If it is right to kill at all upon the field of battle, I can perceive no greater wrong in slaying a *general* than a *private*. True he wears the badge of distinction, and the trumpet of renown speaks his name to the world, but his life is no dearer to himself and wife, and children, and friends, than that of the humblest private who obeys his commands. If Daniel Morgan was guilty of no sin, no dishonor, in ordering his men to fall upon, and slay those under the command of Fraser, he was also guiltless of sin and dishonor, in ordering the sacrifice of their chief. Indeed it is probable that the sacrifice of his life saved that of hundreds, for the slaughter was stayed."† The brutal conduct of the

\* Lossing's Field Book of the Revolution, I., 62.

† Murphy was, like nearly all of Morgan's Irish-American riflemen, a dead shot. He accompanied General Sullivan in his expedition against the Indians in western New York, and nearly lost his life. In the autumn of 1778 he was stationed in Schoharie county, where a girl of sixteen fell in love with him and he resolved to marry her, though he was twelve years her senior. The girl's parents did not approve of the





British General Prescott, toward Ethan Allen, when the latter was taken prisoner, and many similar instances of the vindictiveness of British officers, had filled the minds of the American soldiers with especial indignation, toward those who bore commissions in the British service, and who, so far from refusing to fight against the cause of liberty, as they could have done with propriety by resigning from the army, actually showed themselves the most malignant and inveterate of its enemies. The feeling against them naturally found vent in the most practical manner on the battle-field. After the battle, Burgoyne retreated to Saratoga, where he surrendered on October, 17. For many months previous to this event, Franklin, Deane, and Arthur Lee, as commissioners from Congress, had been in Paris urging the French Government to acknowledge the Independence of the United States. The French king and his ministers were favorably disposed: they sent substantial aid, though privately, to the Americans, and when the news of the surrender at Saratoga, reached Paris, hesitated no longer. A treaty of alliance was signed between the two nations, on Feb. 6, 1778, by which neither of the powers was to make war or peace without the consent of the other. This was the turning point of the contest.

Meanwhile Washington, who had remained in New Jersey, recruiting his army, learned that Howe, who had arrived in the Chesapeake, in July, was advancing toward Philadelphia. The commander-in-chief hastened forward to meet the British, and encountered them at Chads Ford, on the river Brandywine, about twenty-five miles south-west of

match, but she stole away barefooted one evening, went to the fort where her lover was stationed, and together they started for Schenectady, where they were married. In later days, Murphy became a man of considerable influence in political and other affairs. He died in 1818 of cancer in the throat.

Philadelphia, on September 11. The first encounter of the day took place between a strong detachment of Hausen's division of Hessians, and the brigade of Maxwell.\* The Irish American officer, drove the Hessians back, but they were strongly reinforced, and he was compelled to retreat across the river. He fought again, and drove the enemy from the ground it occupied, but heavy masses of British troops being sent against him, he was a second time forced to retire beyond the river.

Sullivan who commanded the right wing of the army, misled by the reports of his scouts, was not prepared for action, when the British burst upon

\* General William Maxwell was a native of Ireland. He joined the army at the commencement of the war. In 1776, he was promoted colonel and raised a battalion of infantry in New Jersey. He fought at General Schuyler on Lake Champlain, and in October, 1776, he was appointed a brigadier-general in the Continental army. After the battle of Trenton, he was engaged in harassing the enemy and in the winter and spring of 1777, was stationed near the enemy's line at Germantown. In the autumn of that year he was engaged in the battle of Brandywine and Germantown, and during the succeeding winter with the suffering army at Valley Forge. He was active in the campaign across New Jersey the following summer, and sustained an important part in the battle of Monmouth. After that engagement he left with Morgan to annoy the enemy's rear in their retreat to Sandy Hook. In June, 1780, he was engaged in the action at Red Bank, and in August of that year, he resigned. He was highly respected by Washington who, on transmitting his resignation to Congress, wrote: "I believe him to be an honest man, a warm friend to his country, and firmly attached to its interests." He died in November, 1795. *Field Book of the Revolution*, ii., 152.

There were two other Maxwells in the Revolutionary army. One was alluded to here. Hugh, born in Ireland in 1733, who was promoted to the rank of lieutenant-colonel in 1753, was in command of the 1st Mass. regiment at Bunker Hill, where he was wounded, and in 1777, he was in command of the 1st Mass. regiment at Saratoga, and lieutenant-colonel at the battle of Red Bank. His brother Thompson, born at Bedford, Mass., was a brave soldier during the Revolutionary war.



# THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

men gave way, with the exception of Stirling's brigade—in which was General Conway with eight hundred men, who stood "firm as a rock," until the artillery of Cornwallis, who commanded the British advance, made fearful havoc in their ranks. Two of Sullivan's aids were killed, La Fayette who fought beside him was wounded, and finally the remnant of his division, finding itself unsupported, was obliged to retreat. Washington with Greene's division, pushed forward to the support of Sullivan, and covered his retreat; a Pennsylvania regiment, under Colonel—afterward General—Walter Stewart, a native of Londonderry\* distinguished the movement of Greene's division, which weakened the American line in his front, he advanced across the river. He was met, and held in check by Wayne, with a much inferior force, until information was received of the retreat of the main body of the Americans, when he too fell back. The approach of night ended the conflict, and the national troops retreated to Chester, marching toward Philadelphia next day, while the British remained on the field. The forces of the latter at the battle of the Brandywine, amounted to over seventeen thousand men, while the Americans hardly numbered eleven thousand, and many of their regiments were only raw militia.

\* General Walter Stewart was born in Londonderry, Ireland. He came to America when quite young, and was so highly esteemed for his soldierly qualities that he was made a colonel in the Continental army when hardly twenty-one years of age, being known as "the boy colonel." His conduct, however, justified the opinion of his friends, and he soon was promoted to the rank of brigadier-general and took part in some of the most important engagements of the war. He became a member of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick of Philadelphia in 1779, and later assisted in founding the Hibernian Society of that city. He married a daughter of the patriotic Blair McClenachan.

# THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

The British, after an ineffectual effort to prevent them, entered Philadelphia on September 26, Congress adjourning to Lancaster, where it continued its sittings, evacuated the city in the following summer, and possession of Philadelphia, Howe's army, although his force was greatly inferior, to a body of his army at Germantown. Washington and it was decided that the divisions of Sullivan and Conway's brigade, should attack the Pennsylvania militia were to attack and rear. Washington accompanied the corps van and Wayne. On the morning of October 4, being in advance, first drove the British distance, but some regiments of militia unable to stand the superior numbers of the enemy by whom they were confronted, gave ground, and their retreat caused a panic in the American ranks. "Sullivan's division of North Carolinians under the command of Armstrong, and assisted by a part of Conway's brigade, having driven the enemy to School-house Lane, and their ammunition exhausted. They were dimly perceive that the enemy were collecting in the right. At that moment, hearing the cry of the horseman, that the enemy had surrounded them, receiving the fire at Chew's house, which was far in the rear, the Americans became panic stricken, and retreated in great precipitation. \* \* \* The prize of victory was abandoned at the moment when another effort might have secured it."\*

At the close of the year, 1777, Washington p.

\* Lossings's Field Book of the Revolution. ii



army in winter quarters at Valley Forge, about twenty miles north-west of Philadelphia. His troops at the time they commenced to build huts, December 19, numbered only eleven thousand, of whom nearly three thousand were unfit for duty, while the British army in Philadelphia, composed of "Britons, Germans, and provincials," was nearly twenty thousand strong. At this time, Conway was inspector-general of the army, a position conferred on him a little before by Congress, with the rank of major-general.\* The winter of 1777-8 was extremely severe, and

\* Major-General Thomas Conway was born in Ireland in 1733. He was educated in France, entered the army, attained the rank of colonel, and was, made a Count. In 1777, on the recommendation of Silas Deane, he came to America to join the Continental army. He was almost immediately made a brigadier-general, and joined the army at Morristown. He fought bravely at Brandywine and Germantown, and proved that he had profited by his thirty years' experience in the art of war. He was soon appointed inspector-general of the army, with the rank of major-general, by Congress, notwithstanding the fact that Washington wrote a letter to a member of that body remonstrating against his promotion. Much has been said about his prominence in the "cabal" formed against the commander-in-chief, but the facts do not at all bear out the assertion that he was the instigator of the scheme. It is acknowledged that Generals Gates and Mifflin, and even the veteran patriot "Samuel Adams, with two or three others of the New England delegation in Congress, and one of the Virginia deputies," were among the "conspicuous actors" in this affair. Lossing admits this, and he says: "Whether the movement originated in personal ambition, or a sincere conviction of the necessity of making a change on account of the alleged 'Fabian slowness' of Washington in his military movements, is a question of difficult solution;" and, in another place he remarks: "How extensive was the dissaffection towards him (the commander-in-chief) among the officers of the army, it is difficult to determine, and it is equally difficult to fix a direct charge upon any individual of actual attempts to supersede Washington."—(*Field Book of the Revolution*, ii., 130-134.) "It appears clear," however, to the

"for

the soldiers of the Revolutionary army at Valley suffered terribly. Thousands were barefooted, many no blankets, the clothes of nearly all were ragged, times the whole force suffered for want of sufficient food. There was a scarcity of horses in the camp, and the men were naked and starving as they were, often yoked then to vehicles of their own construction in carrying provisions when procured. Wayne, taking detachments from his brigade, made many excursions, in quest of provisions, and often foraged to within sight of the spires of Philadelphia. The brigades of Conway, Maxwell, McDowell, Learned, and Poor, whose ranks were filled with Irish-Americans, bore their privations with heretofore untold fortitude, as indeed, did all the sufferers at Valley Forge. The first of February, 1778, four thousand of the army were incapable of any kind of service from want of

Washington from the chief command." But when it is remembered that Conway was hardly a year in the service altogether, it is not surprising that Congress will compel the conclusion that this view is manifestly exaggerated. General Sullivan, in his letter to Washington, says that Conway was "imprudently led into the cabal," and his statement is no doubt true. Conway deserved blame, but others still more, and it must be remembered that after his duel with Cadwallader he wrote a frank letter of regret and apology to the illustrious chief against whom he had offended, while others connected with the scheme sought to excuse themselves by evasions or denials of well proven facts, or by throwing the blame on him after his return to France. In the letter he expressed his "sincere grief for having done, written or said, anything disagreeable" to Washington. "Justice and truth," he said, "prompt me to declare my last sentiments. You are, in my opinion, a great and good man. May you long enjoy the love, veneration and esteem of these States whose liberties you have asserted by your valor." Conway, having resigned his commission in the spring of 1778, returned soon after to France, where he was made, in 1784, a maréchal de camp and appointed Governor of all the French possessions in America. He died in 1800.



ing. The condition of the rest was very little better. In a word, out of the eleven or twelve thousand men that were in camp, it would have been difficult to muster five thousand fit for duty."\* In this crisis the hearts of the patriot soldiers were gladdened by the arrival of relief from a distant quarter. General Moylan, who had resigned his post of commissary-general, in order to take command of a regiment of horse, had made known to his friends in Cork, his native city, and to his brother the Catholic Bishop of the diocese, the almost destitute condition of the American army. The sympathy of the men of the Irish city was aroused. They had a short time before assisted Ethan Allen and his comrades, while being transferred as prisoners, to America, and now they privately and expeditiously secured a ship and loaded her with large supplies of provisions, and clothing. She was then sent to Boston, which port she reached in safety, and her cargo was forwarded to Valley Forge, for the patriot army.†

Sir Henry Clinton succeeded Howe as Commander-in-Chief of the British, in the spring of 1778. Fearing that Washington might make a dash on, and capture New York, he quietly evacuated Philadelphia, on June 18, and proceeded by land to the former city. When the intelligence reached Washington, he sent off Maxwell at once to check Clinton's progress as much as possible, and then started in pursuit at the head of his whole force.

The Americans following up the retreating invaders, struck them near Monmouth court-house on June 2d, the brigades of Maxwell and Morgan being the first to engage the enemy. Twenty thousand men were engaged in the battle. During the whole day the battle raged without

advantage to either side. Twice the British attempted to turn the American flank, but they were repulsed; then they tried an assault on the right, but a battery under the immediate command of Knox, swept down their ranks and drove them back, bleeding and disheartened. Wayne, stationed with an advanced corps of his Pennsylvania riflemen, an eminence, with a park of artillery. From this position he kept up a galling fire upon the English, and repeatedly repulsed the royal grenadiers who had attempted to dislodge him with the bayonet. Moncton, then perceiving that victory depended on driving Wayne from his position, harangued his men, and placing himself at their head, advanced in solid column upon the Americans. The English advanced until within a few yards of the Americans, when their general, waving his sword, gave a shout and ordered his grenadiers to charge. At that moment Wayne gave a signal; a terrible volley burst upon the assailants, and almost every British officer fell. Among them was their leader, Moncton. Over his dead body the Americans and English fought desperately, until the patriots secured it and carried it to the rear. At that time a general assault was made along the whole line; the enemy, beaten at every point, fell back. It was the hottest part of the conflict that one of Knox's aides, an Irishman, was shot down while in the act of firing a cannon. His wife (the same that had fired the last shot at Fort Clinton), saw him fall, and rushing to the spot, picked up the match, and fired the piece against the ranks of the enemy. She vowed she would fill the place of her husband at the gun and avenge his death, and maintained her post at the gun, firing it with good effect until the battle was won. Lossing thus describes her: "during this part of the action that Molly, the wife of the Irishman, displayed great courage and presence

\* Spencer's History of the United States, i., 520.

† Mooney's History of Ireland, p. 831.

[REDACTED]

-----

.

.



We have already noticed her bravery in firing the last gun at Fort Clinton. She was a sturdy young camp-follower, only twenty-two years old, and in devotion to her husband she illustrated the character of her countrywomen of the Emerald Isle. In the action in question, while her husband was managing one of the field-pieces, she constantly brought him water from a spring near by. A shot from the enemy killed him at his post; and the officer in command, having no one competent to fill his place, ordered the piece to be withdrawn. Molly saw her husband fall as she came from the spring, and also heard the order. She dropped her bucket, seized the rammer, and vowed she would fill the place of her husband at the gun and avenge his death. She performed the duty with a skill and courage which attracted the attention of all who saw her. On the following morning, covered with blood, General Greene presented her to Washington, who, admiring her bravery, conferred upon her the commission of sergeant. By his recommendation her name was placed on the list of half-pay officers for life. After leaving the army she retired to Fort Montgomery, among the Hudson highlands, where she died. She usually went by the name of *Captain Molly*. The venerable widow of General Hamilton, yet living (1852), told me that she had often seen *Captain Molly*. She described her as a stout, fair-haired, young Irishwoman, with a handsome piercing eye. The French officers, charmed with the story of her bravery, made her many presents."\*

The Americans slept on the field they had won, on the night of the battle, but the British took advantage of the darkness to steal away in the direction of Sandy Hook. From this place they were conveyed by the British fleet, under Lord Howe to New York, arriving there on the first

of July. A few days later, the French fleet, twelve of the line, and six frigates with four thousand men arrived at the entrance of Delaware Bay, having on board Silas Deane, one of the American commissioners, Gerard, the first minister sent by France to the States.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

## CHAPTER XIV.

### THE IRISH IN THE WAR OF INDEPENDENCE (CONTINUED).

On the arrival of the French fleet a plan was formed for driving the English from Rhode Island. Ten thousand men under Sullivan and Greene were assembled near Providence, and it was arranged that d'Estaing with his squadron should co-operate with the American land forces in an attack upon the British who had fortified themselves near Newport. Before Sullivan had made all his preparations, an English fleet under Howe appeared off the harbor of Newport, and the French Admiral sailed out to engage his enemy. They spent the principal part of that day (August 10, 1778) manoeuvring for position, and on that following a violent storm arose which separated the combatants and severely damaged many of the ships. The action was consequently indecisive, and a few days after d'Estaing again appeared off Newport Harbor, but was prevented by his officers, who urged him to go to Boston and refit his fleet, from joining Sullivan in the projected attack. Upon the withdrawal of the French, for the purpose of repairing damages, the Americans were forced to abandon Rhode Island much to their disappointment and vexation.

The principal events which occurred during the latter part of 1778, were the massacre by the Tories and Indians of the people of Cherry Valley in November, and the capture of Savannah by the British on December 29.

On February 14, 1779, General Mifflin's army of about two hundred and fifty men defeated a much larger force of Tories under Boyd at Kettle Creek, on the border of Wilkes county, Georgia. The fight was a decisive one when the Tories fled in confusion leaving many dead on the field, and seventy-five of their men were taken into the hands of the patriots, whose losses were only one and twenty-three wounded. Losing this battle was one of the severest blows which the Tories received. It emboldened Lincoln.

\* Andrew Pickens was born in Paxton town, South Carolina, 19th of September, 1739. His parents were from Ireland. He was removed with his father to the Waxham settlement in Georgia. He served as a volunteer in Grant's expedition against the Indians, in which he took his first lessons in the art of war. He was a republican when the Revolution broke out, and was very active of the military partisans of the South. From 1774 until 1794, he was a member of the South Carolina legislature. He was elected to a seat in Congress. He was commander of the South Carolina militia in 1795; and was sent to treat with the Indians. President Washington ordered him to lead a corps of light troops under General Wayne, to serve against the Indians in the Northwest, but he declined the honor. He died at his home in the district, South Carolina, the scene of his earliest battles, August, 1817, at the age of 78 years. His remains lie in the "grave-yard meeting-house" in Pendleton. In 1765, he married the daughter of the late John C. Calhoun, one of the most brilliant men of the South.—*Lossing*, ii. 511.

† Col. John Dooly, born in South Carolina, of Irish descent, entered the Continental army in Georgia as captain, in 1776, and rose to the rank of colonel, was very active in the neighborhood of Savannah. In 1780, when a party of Tories, sent out from Augusta, entered his house in Wilkes county at midnight, and murdered him in the presence of his wife and children.—*Georgia*, ii. 306.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

of the Southern army, to make an effort to drive the British back to Savannah.

Later in the spring of that year the mercenaries of King George, aided by the American Loyalists, burned Norfolk, Portsmouth, Suffolk, and Gosport in Virginia, as well as New Haven, Fairfield, Norwalk and other places in Connecticut.

On the first of June, 1779, Sir Henry Clinton captured the small forts at Stony Point and Verplancks, which commanded the passage of the Hudson and permitted free communication between the New England States and those to the South. Washington much regretted their loss, and determined to recapture them. After having made some changes in the position of the main army he directed Wayne to retake Stony Point. It was then the strongest fortress on the Hudson, and garrisoned by six hundred British regulars under the command of Lieutenant-Colonel Johnson. "The position of the fortress was such," says Lossing, "that it seemed almost impregnable. Situated upon a huge rocky bluff, an island at high water, and always inaccessible dry-shod, except across the narrow causeway in the rear, it was strongly defended by outworks and a double row of *abattis*. Upon three sides of the rock were the waters of the Hudson, and on the fourth was a morass deep and dangerous." But Wayne was not easily deterred by obstacles, and tradition avers that while conversing with Washington on the subject of this expedition he remarked with emphasis, "General I'll storm h—ll if *you* will only plan it." He resolved at all hazards to storm the fort, and waited for the ebbing of the tide and the first deep slumber of the garrison to move toward the works. His troops were divided into two columns. Lieutenant De Fleury led the van of the right, with one hundred and fifty volunteers. The van  
wart, an inman, and con-

sisted of one hundred volunteers, each with unloaded bayonets and fixed bayonets. An advance guard of twenty men for each company, under Lieutenants Gibbons and Knox, preceded them to remove the *abattis* and obstructions. These composed the forlorn hope. Gibbons and Knox, there were many other distinguished Irish officers with Wayne, who led the right division on that occasion. Colonel Moylan rushed side by side with him up the heights. Colonel Butler led the left, having with him Major Murphy and two companies under the latter's command.

The Americans advanced to within pistol shot of the pickets before they were discovered, and drove them from the British outposts, forced their way on to the bayonet's point. Wayne was struck on the head but though he believed for a moment that the blow was fatal he shouted to his aids as he fell, "Carry me to the fort for I will die at the head of my column." He was not seriously hurt and in a few moments he was amongst his men, inside the works, and exulting in the render of the British. The latter lost seventy-five men, while their commander and five hundred and fifty officers and men were taken prisoners, the loss of the victors only amounting to fifteen killed and three wounded. As soon as success was assured, General Anthony sent the following brief dispatch to the commander-in-chief.

STONY POINT, 16th

DEAR GEN'L :

The fort and garrison, with Col. Johnston, are ours. The men behaved like men who are determined to be free. Yours most sincerely,  
ANTHONY.

GEN'L WASHINGTON.

An attack ordered to be made upon the fort at Stony Point at the same time having failed, it was d

10/10/10

ble to dismantle and evacuate Stony Point. This work was completed on the eighteenth, and Wayne with his gallant band rejoined the main army. Everyone praised the dash and bravery of the intrepid Irish-American General, for what he had accomplished on this occasion. Even Gen. Chas. Lee, who was not on terms of the most cordial friendship with him, wrote saying, "I do most seriously declare, that your assault of Stony Point is not only the most brilliant, in my opinion, throughout the whole course of the war on either side, but it is the most brilliant I am acquainted with in history." Dr. Rush said in a letter, "Our streets rang for many days with nothing but the name of General Wayne. You are remembered constantly next to our great and good Washington. You have established the national character of our country, you have taught our enemies that bravery, humanity and magnanimity are the national virtues of the Americans." Congress voted Wayne its thanks "for his brave, prudent and soldierly conduct," and resolved that a gold medal should be struck and presented to him. It also decided in accordance with the recommendation of Washington "That the value of the military stores taken at Stony Point be ascertained and divided among the gallant troops by whom it was reduced in such manner and proportions as the commander-in-chief shall prescribe." Gibbons, Stewart, Knox and De Fleury were also thanked and promoted by Congress.

In the month of July, Sullivan was sent at the head of a strong force to drive the Indians from Western New York, where they had committed great ravages, murdering, plundering and making prisoners of numbers of the people. Under him was placed Gen. James Clinton with fifteen hundred men. The two Irish-American Generals formed a junction at Tioga on August 22, their whole force amounting to five thousand men, with Hand, Maxwell, and Poor as

brigade commanders, and Proctor's artillery, with a body of riflemen. They met the enemy near Elmira, the Indians being aided by a large force of Tories under the command of Brant and Sir John Johnson. After a hard struggle, lasting for over two hours, the savages and their more brutal allies were routed with heavy loss. Sullivan pursued his victory driving the enemy in all directions before him, until he reached the Genesee Valley. He then retraced his steps, the object of the expedition being accomplished, only taking care to send Col. Z. Butler of Wyoming to lay waste the Indian towns on the eastern shore of Cayuga Lake and leaving some small detachments behind for the protection of the people. This precaution proved to be of great advantage, for a short time after a large body of Tories and Indians, under Brant, Johnson and others, made another irruption into this district and attacked the Middle Fort (Middleburgh). The commander of this post, Woolsey, "concealed himself," according to Campbell's *Annals*, "at first with the women and children, and when driven out by the ridicule of his associates, crawled around the entrenchments on his hands and knees, amid the jeers and bravos of the militia who felt their courage revive as their laughter was excited by the cowardice of the major." The Irish rifleman, whom we have met before, Timothy Murphy, was, however, among the garrison, and his determination made amends for the commander's poltroonery. When Sir John Johnson sent a flag of truce to demand a surrender, he fired on the bearer, as a warning not to approach, and when ordered by Woolsey to desist he refused to obey and excused himself by saying that the enemy never had shown any regard for military courtesy. Another flag was sent later which Murphy again warned back by a bullet, and when Woolsey again ordered him to cease firing, the simple rifleman plainly expressed the opinion that his commander was a coward who

\_\_\_\_\_

— — — — —

•

•

•

•

•



meant to surrender the fort, and that he would not allow it. This proceeding was repeated; once the officers and regulars threatened Murphy with death for his disobedience of orders, but the militia who esteemed him highly took his part and set the others at defiance. His boldness was rewarded by success. Johnson, suspecting from the refusal to treat with his messenger that the garrison was much stronger than it really was, gave up the siege, and moved in another direction.

The siege of Savannah took place in September, 1779, and some regiments of the Irish Brigade in the French service took part in it. Here it may be as well to say that even before the Treaty of Paris several Irish officers in the French service came to America to aid the patriots. Amongst these were Col. Roche de Fermoy, Col. Hand and others of the supernumerary or reformed officers of the Irish brigade. "As this corps," says the announcement of the sailing of those gentlemen for America, "is known to contain some of the best disciplined officers in Europe, there is no doubt but that they will meet with all suitable encouragement." When hostilities between France and England broke out the Irish regiments in France, who considered themselves entitled to serve *before* all other corps against the English\*—a claim more especially advanced on this occasion by the

\* Lieutenant-General Count Arthur Dillon commences his narrative of the services rendered in this war, by his own and the other Irish regiments, in these words: "*On a vu que les regimens Irlandois ont ete constamment employes dans toutes les guerres precedentes; ils ont toujours reclame le privilege de marcher les premiers contre les Anglais dans tous les climats ou la France leur seroit la guerre,*" &c. That is, "the Irish regiments, as we see, have been constantly employed in all the preceding wars. These regiments have always claimed the privilege in all the countries in which France waged war against England, of marching foremost against that nation. It was owing to this principle that the regiment of Dillon demanded and obtained the right of serving in America."

### THE IRISH R.

regiment of Dillon—were 1 Regiment just named eml to the number of 1,000 1,400, in the squadron of of this squadron from Brest at Martinique, enabled the of the island of Grenada aimed at in attacking the was to create a diversion compel a withdrawal from of the British forces. On most part Irish, under t Grenada and attacked t d'Estaing himself leadin sault was successful, and surrendered at discreti English Admiral, Byron, St. Christopher's, d'Es Savannah, and joined G city, then held by the B 9. Owing to a heavy forces lost their way ir march, and the assault w of Dillon's Regiment, the fortifications and ir also fell the heroic Isl of the American force the arm and thigh e his camp. Colonel F French Commander, at Savannah, contrary to the brave Colonel re he disapproved of hi to complain of his



his regiment immediately to the attack, and fell during the hottest of the conflict. The Count de Segur thus speaks of another distinguished officer of the Brigade, who took part in the attack on Savannah and was subsequently Colonel of the regiment of Walsh. "I will narrate an anecdote of my friend Lynch that will give an idea of his singular bravery, and of the originality of his disposition. Lynch, after being engaged in the campaigns of India, served, before he was employed in the army of Rochambeau, under the orders of the Count d'Estaing, and distinguished himself particularly at the too-memorable siege of Savannah. M. d'Estaing, at the most critical moment of that sanguinary affair, being at the head of the right of one column, directed Lynch to carry an urgent order to the third column, which was on the left. These columns were within grape-shot range of the enemy's entrenchments, and on both sides a tremendous firing was kept up. Lynch, instead of passing through the centre, or in the rear of the column, proceeded coolly through the shower of balls and grape-shot which the French and English were firing at each other. It was in vain that M. d'Estaing, and those who surrounded him, cried to Lynch to take another direction. He went on, executed his order, and returned the same way; that is to say, under a vault of flying shot, and where everyone expected to witness his instant destruction. 'Zounds!' said the General on seeing him return unhurt: 'the devil must be in you surely! Why did you choose such a road as that, in which you might have expected to perish a thousand times over?' 'Because it was the *shortest*,' answered Lynch. Having uttered these few words he went, with equal coolness, and joined the group that was most earnestly engaged in storming the place. He was," adds Segur, "afterward promoted to the rank of Lieutenant-General, and commanded our infantry in the first engagement we had with the Prussians on the Heights of Valmy, in 1792."

In consequence of the lateness of the season, he sailed a few days after for the West Indies, and his little army proceeded to Charleston.

On May 12, 1780, Sir Henry Clinton, then the coming master of Charleston, notwithstanding the arrival of Lincoln, and the disaster caused throughout the South, which was intensified by the defeat of Buford's regiment by Tarleton at the battle of the Clouds, the home of the future victor of New Orleans, after the surrender of Charleston. The British had proposed terms to Buford which he considered humiliating to be accepted, and almost without the American's reply, Tarleton with his cavalry cut off the patriots and hewed them down, unprepared for the case as they were. Lossing says "it was nothing less than a cold-blooded massacre." Tarleton's quarter became proverbial as a seat of cruelty; and even Stedman the British historian writes that "on this occasion the virtue of humanity was forgotten." Horror seized on the people in the city. Women and children fled as fast as possible from the streets who had perpetrated the atrocity, and among them were the widowed mother of Andrew Jackson, and his brother Robert. Both these boys were, however, taken prisoners by the British, and both were severely punished by a ruffianly officer whose boots they refused to carry. Robert dying soon after from the effects of the punishment which he had received, while Andrew bore the Englishman's sword to his grave. But he paid a deep debt at New Orleans.

The tidings of these and other reverses suffered by the patriots in the Carolinas, soon reached the North, and excited deep apprehension, and dismay amongst those who wished well to the cause of freedom. But soon



peared a rift in the cloud. At this time, as Hood\* says, "when everything depended upon a vigorous prosecution of the war, when the American army, moreover was in imminent danger of being compelled to yield to famine, a far more dangerous enemy than the British, when the urgent expostulations of the commander-in-chief and the strenuous recommendations of Congress had utterly failed to arouse a just sense of the dangers of the crisis; the genuine love of country and most noble self sacrifices of some individuals in Philadelphia, supplied the place of the slumbering patriotism of the country and saved her cause from most disgraceful ruin. In this great emergency was conceived and promptly carried into operation 'the plan of the Bank of Pennsylvania, established for supplying the army of the United States with provisions for two months.' On the 17th of June, 1780, ninety-three Philadelphia merchants signed the following paper:—

"Whereas, in the present situation of the public affairs in the United States, the greatest and most vigorous exertions are required for the management of the just and necessary war in which they are engaged with Great Britain: We, the subscribers, deeply impressed with the sentiments that should, on such an occasion, govern us in the prosecution of a war, on the event of which our own freedom and that of our posterity, and the freedom and independence of the United States, are all involved, hereby severally pledge our property and credit for the several sums specified and mentioned after our names, in order to support the credit of a bank to be established for furnishing a supply of provisions for the armies of the United States. And do hereby severally promise and engage to execute to the directors of the said bank, bonds of the form hereunto annexed. Witness our hand, this 17th day of June, in the year of our Lord, 1780."

Then follow the names of the subscribers with the sums

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

respectively subscribed, amounting to £300,000 (\$1,000,000), payable in gold or silver. Of this amount twenty-members of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick subscribed £103,500—more than one-third.

Twenty of these who were of Irish birth or blood others being honorary members—subscribed the following amounts:—

Blair McClenachan.....	£10,000	John Patton.....	
I. M. Nesbitt & Co.....	5,000	Benjamin Fuller.....	
Richard Peters.....	5,000	George Meade & Co.....	
Samuel Meredith.....	5,000	John Donaldson.....	
James Mease.....	5,000	Henry Hill.....	
Thomas Barclay.....	5,000	Kean & Nichols.....	
Hugh Sheil.....	5,000	James Caldwell.....	
John Dunlap.....	4,000	Samuel Caldwell.....	
John Nixon.....	5,000	John Shee.....	
George Campbell.....	2,000	Sharp Delany.....	
John Mease.....	4,000	Tench Francis.....	
Bunner, Murray & Co...	6,000		
Total.....		£88,500 — \$1,000,000	

The Society of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick founded in 1771, its first President being General Broome, brother of the Catholic Bishop of Cork. It included its members some of the purest and bravest of the Irish and soldiers of the young Republic, and even the President of his country himself was enrolled in its ranks and attended its gatherings.

Within a month after the fresh proof of Irish patriotism, fidelity and generosity above alluded to, given, a French fleet under Admiral de Ternay, boarded 6,000 men, at the head of whom was Count de Rochambeau, arrived at Newport, R. I. The spirits of the Irish rose again, and they prepared with confidence for the struggle against British despotism.

On August 7th, Sumter attacked the British at



\_\_\_\_\_

.....

## IN AMERICA.

troops were chiefly Irish-  
istrict. Opposed to them  
ican regiment, the infantry  
l Loyalist corps. After a  
; four hours, the patriots  
d; but just at that moment  
rived and under those cir-  
strong enough to follow up  
self with bringing off the  
ady captured. Amongst  
y were some gallant Irish-  
n McClure \* "one of the  
" Capt. Read of North  
n McClure, and many of  
known as the "Chester  
her officers, who under  
mselves worthy of honor  
ne, Lacy and Neil, who

August 16, where Col.

enerable and patriotic Judge  
in the patriot ranks. Gen-  
lf the many brave men with  
ted in the army, he was one  
ed on his loss as incalcula-  
by two bullets, at the first  
of his cousins, sons of Judge  
uid, he urged them to leave  
e, he was taken with other  
e his mother went to nurse  
and on the eighteenth, the  
t Fishing Creek, he expired  
burg Resolutions had been  
district, and his men were  
*Lossing, il. 457.*

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

213

Rutherford \* was taken prisoner, led to his being superseded  
by Greene who was more fortunate than his predecessors.

On Jan. 31, 1781, Morgan who commanded the Western  
division of the army of the South, met Tarleton at the  
Cowpens, S. C. The patriot general had under his com-  
mand 400 continental infantry under Col. Howard † of the  
Maryland Line, a dashing Irish-American officer, besides a  
considerable force of militia and a body of dragoons under  
Col. Washington. His advance was composed of a body  
of militia, numbering about three hundred, headed by Gen.

---

\* General Griffith Rutherford was an Irishman by birth. He resided  
in the Locke settlement, and in 1775, represented Rowan county in the  
convention at Newbern. In 1776, he led a large force into the Cherokee  
country, and assisted the people of North Carolina in destroying their  
towns and villages. He was appointed Brigadier-General by the Pro-  
vincial Congress, in April, 1776. He commanded a brigade at Camden,  
and was taken prisoner by the British. He was soon exchanged, how-  
ever, and was in command at Wilmington when that place was evacuated  
by the British at the close of the war. He was a State senator in 1784,  
and soon afterward removed to Tennessee, where he died. A county in  
North Carolina bears his name, as does also one in Tennessee.—*Lossing*,  
il. 391. Drake says that he was "a brave and patriotic man." One of  
his descendants to-day is Senator Lucas, of West Virginia, the foremost  
of Southern orators, whose finest address was made on "Daniel O'Con-  
nell, the Liberator," before the West Virginia University; and who, on  
the paternal side, is descended from the famous Irish patriotic Lucas  
family.

† John Eager Howard was born in Baltimore county, Maryland, in  
1753. His mother was Johanna O'Carroll, one of the family of Ely  
O'Carroll. He fought at White Plains, Germantown, Monmouth, Cow-  
pens and Guildford Court House. In 1788, he was chosen Governor of  
Maryland, which office he held for three years. Washington offered him  
a seat in the Cabinet as Secretary of War, but for private reasons he  
declined the honor. In 1796, he was elected to the Senate of the United  
States, where he served until 1803, when he retired from public life.  
He died in 1827.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]



Andrew Pickens, who had under him Captains Beatty\* and Hammond of South Carolina, men of the same stock with himself. The battle began about nine in the morning. It was long and fiercely contested. Several of the American officers displayed dauntless bravery and great skill, and their exertions were rewarded by the defeat of the red-coats, who lost, besides their wounded and five hundred prisoners, over a hundred killed, and left in the hands of the victors, two pieces of artillery, eight hundred muskets, two standards, a hundred dragoon horses, besides military stores of all kinds. Congress voted a gold medal to Morgan, a silver one to Howard, a sword to Pickens, and special thanks to the other officers engaged.

The battle of Guildford Court House, fought on March 15, 1781, though resulting in a nominal victory for the British, proved of little advantage to them. The Americans would have won in all probability had it not been for the conduct of some newly raised North Carolina militia, who weakened at a critical moment. Two Maryland regiments under Cols. Ford and Gunby, Col. Lynch with a battalion of Virginia riflemen, Washington and Howard with their veteran troops, fought bravely, and proved themselves well able to meet the British regulars, on anything like an equal footing.

In June, 1781, Augusta surrendered to the Americans. In the siege of that post Captains O'Neill and Armstrong, at the head of some companies of cavalry, rendered good service and shared in the glory of compelling the British to lay down their arms.

At the battle of Eutaw Springs, which was fought September 8th, when Greene commanded, and the Americans

\* Capt. William Beatty was born of Irish parents in Frederick county, Maryland.

lost the fruits of victory by the same conduct which prevented the Irish insurgents of '98 from holding possession of New Ross after having taken it; Pickens commanded the South Carolina division and did much with Howard, and other officers to retrieve the fortunes of the day, while they were endangered by the carelessness and overconfidence of the patriot soldiers.

A short time after the battle of Guildford Court-House Cornwallis moved northward leaving one of his subordinates in command in the South. Lafayette when at Elkton, Maryland, heard of the Englishman's arrival at Petersburg, Va., and advanced to meet him, but had not sufficient strength to cope with his foe. Washington was at this time contemplating an attack on New York, but various circumstances induced him to defer it, and instead to move against Cornwallis. The latter had fortified himself at Yorktown, Lafayette being within a few miles but too weak to succeed when the French fleet under the Count de Grasse arrived in the Chesapeake, and soon after Washington with Rochambeau reached Williamsburg. The allied armies completely invested Yorktown on the last of September 1781, and on the nineteenth of October the English general surrendered. He had been guilty of outrages in America almost as atrocious as those afterwards carried out under his orders in Ireland during '98, had acted more like a marauder than a general, and had caused a loss to the people of nearly ten millions of dollars, but now his day was over, and he was compelled to submit to those he had regarded as rebels, and whom he had once hoped to treat completely at his mercy. What that would have been may judge from his conduct towards the Irish insurgents seventeen years later.

By this surrender, there fell into the hands of the allies thirteen thousand prisoners, exclusive of seamen, several

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

brass and one hundred and seventy iron guns, nearly seven thousand five hundred muskets and twenty eight regimental standards, besides large quantities of military supplies. Two Generals and thirty-one field officers were among the prisoners. Cornwallis feigned illness in order to avoid the humiliation of delivering up his sword, and sent one of his generals (O'Hara) to perform his part in the ceremony. Lincoln was then deputed by Washington to receive the sword of his conquered foe.

When the English marched to the field of humiliation to throw down their arms and deliver up their standards and battle-flags, Ensign Wilson, of Clinton's Brigade, an Irish-American aged eighteen years and the youngest commissioned officer in the army, received them from the hands of the conquered Britons. Washington immediately dispatched one of his aids Col. Tilghman, to announce the glad tidings to Thomas McKean, President of the Continental Congress at Philadelphia.

McKean rose from his bed at midnight and spread the news over the city. The watchmen too, when proclaiming the hour, adding "and Cornwallis is taken," and the old State House bell rang out its notes of gladness. Philadelphia was illuminated that night, and next day Charles Thomson read the dispatch to Congress, which thereupon passed appropriate resolutions, and thanked particularly Washington, Rochambeau and De Grasse.

Knox, for his splendid services as chief of artillery, received the commission of a major general on the occasion, a well-merited honor.

The Continental army after the surrender, was sent into winter quarters in Pennsylvania, New Jersey, and on the Hudson. The French remained in Virginia ready to render service in the North or South until the summer of 1782, when they marched to the camp of the Continentals on the

Hudson, proceeding thence to New England in the autumn and sailing to the West Indies in December.

The English were still reluctant to acknowledge the independence of America, the king and Royal family being especially bitter against those whom they had so long sought to punish as "rebels."

The Marquis of Rockingham died July 1, 1782, and was succeeded by Lord Shelburne. According to Francis King George III. said to the new minister on his advancement of office, "I will be plain with you. The point *my heart, and which I am determined, be the consequence it may, never to relinquish but with my crown and life prevent a total unequivocal recognition of the independence of America.* Promise to support me on this ground and leave you unmolested on every other, and with full powers as the prime minister of the kingdom."

But the impotence of Britain to place its hated yoke upon the neck of a free people was palpable to all, and on November 30, 1782. Provisional Articles of Peace were signed at Paris between the Commissioners of the United States and those of England. On January 20th of the following year, it was agreed that hostilities should cease between the belligerents, and the news reaching America on the 24th of March, Washington issued a proclamation of peace on the eighth anniversary of the battle of Lexington, April 19, 1783. A definite treaty was finally signed at Paris on September 3d of the same year, by which Britain acknowledged the Independence of the United States, and was out of her power to prevent it any longer.

When peace was proclaimed a solemn Te Deum was chanted in St. Joseph's Church, Philadelphia, at the instigation of the Marquis de la Luzerne, Minister Plenipotentiary of the French Government. Washington was present with the principal generals, as were also the members of Congress.



and of the Assembly and State Council of Pennsylvania. The Abbe Bendale preached on the occasion.

"Who but He," exclaimed the sacred orator, "*He in whose hands are the hearts of men, could inspire the allied troops with the friendship, the confidence, the tenderness of brothers?* . . . . Let us beseech the God of mercy to shed on the councils of the king of France your ally, that spirit of wisdom, of justice, and of mercy, which has rendered his reign glorious. Let us likewise entreat the God of wisdom to maintain in each of the States that intelligence by which the United States are inspired. . . . Let us offer Him pure hearts, unsullied by private hatred or public dissension; and let us, with one will and one voice, pour forth to the Lord that hymn of praise by which Christians celebrate their gratitude and His glory—*Te Deum Laudamus*."

When information of the signing of the definitive treaty reached the English headquarters here, Sir Guy Carleton gave notice that he should be ready for the final evacuation of New York on the 25th of November. George Clinton, by virtue of his office as Governor of New York, was to take charge of the city, and repaired to its vicinity to await events, accompanied by Washington. By request of Carleton, to prevent any disorder which might occur as the British retired, a detachment of American troops marched into the city on the morning appointed, down to near the junction of Third Ave. and the Bowery, to a point where they remained until the afternoon.\* As the rear guard of the

\* The prospect of peace and the acknowledgment by the British Government of the Independence of the United States, was far from affording pleasure to those here who had signalized themselves as loyalists. Their active and merciless zeal in the cause of Britain during the war had made them extremely obnoxious to their neighbors and to portions of their own families. They feared with reason the vengeance of those who escaped from the sugar house and provost, and North Dutch Church (then a prison house, where hundreds died of cold and starvation), and whose exasperation had been kindled to a flame. They therefore judged

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA

British army began to embark, they moved to the Battery and took possession of it. General Knox was appointed to the command of the States troops on the occasion, with directions to make suitable arrangements for the triumphal entry.

The American soldiers marched into the city in the following order:—

A Squadron of Dragoons.  
Advanced Guard of Light Infantry.  
A Battery of Artillery.  
Battalion of Light Infantry.  
Battalion of Massachusetts Troops.  
Rear Guard, commanded by Major

After the troops had taken possession of the city, Governor George Clinton made the following manner:—

The General and the Governor, with their Staff.  
The Lieutenant-Governor and the Members of the Executive Council.  
The temporary government of the Southern District.  
Major-General Knox and the Officers of the Artillery.  
Citizens on horseback, eight abreast.  
The Speaker of the Assembly and Citizens on foot.

Later in the day Gen. Clinton gave a dinner at the Battery, at which the Commander-in-Chief and his officers were present. Among the following:—

The American Army.  
The fleets and armies of France which have sailed.  
The memories of those heroes who have fallen.

It is best to prevent the evil and hide themselves from the face of the mother country, where their descendants are in Canada and Nova Scotia. The first emigration of Irishists set sail in a fleet of transports in October, 1783. The first emigrations took place during the following twelve months. A manuscript report of Brook Watson, British Consul at New York, November 24, 1783, the total number of Irish emigrants, men, women and children—who left New York during the year 1783—*nine thousand two hundred and forty-four*.



May justice support what courage has gained.  
 The vindicators of the rights of mankind in *every quarter of the globe*.  
 May America be an asylum to the persecuted of the earth.  
 May a close union of the States guard the temple they have erected to liberty.  
 May the remembrance of this day be a lesson to princes and tyrants.

Gen. Washington lingered a few days after the British had left, fixing his headquarters at Fraunce's, where on Dec. 4th, his officers assembled to bid him farewell. The scene was an affecting one. The dangers and privations of years had knit officers and General together as comrades, and now that the object of all was attained the pang of separation was felt. As the moment came he turned to the company and with kindest parting words said: "I now take leave of you, and most devoutly wish that your latter days may be as prosperous and happy as your former ones have been glorious and honorable. I cannot come to each, but would be obliged if each one would come and take me by the hand." They obeyed in silence—Knox first, whom he kissed, and then the others embraced him in turn while the tears ran down their cheeks. Then turning silently from the weeping group he passed from the room and walked to Whitehall, followed by his comrades where a barge was in waiting to convey him to Paulus Hook (now Jersey City). Having entered the boat, he bade them adieu with a silent gesture, and the officers returned to their place of rendezvous, mute and dejected at the loss of their leader. Washington proceeded to Annapolis, where Congress was then in session, and resigning his commission as commander-in-chief, hastened to Mount Vernon to resume the duties of a private citizen.

## CHAPTER XV.

IRISHMEN IN THE NAVY DURING THE REVOLUTION.—O  
—BARRY.

The capture, already alluded to, of the English *Margaretta*, by Jeremiah O'Brien at Machias, Maine, May 11, 1775, led to the first steps taken by the Provincial Congress of Massachusetts, towards employing a navy. O'Brien brought the prisoners he had taken to Watertown, where the Provincial Congress was in session, and by order of that body was placed in command of a cruiser, in which he did good service. On June 7th, the Massachusetts Congress first acted on the subject of a navy. It is curious to notice the caution with which it moved. It appointed a committee to consider the expediency of establishing a number of small armed vessels to cruise on our seas for the protection of our trade and the annoyance of our enemies: and that the members be enjoined, by the Congress, to observe secrecy in the matter. On the 11th, this committee was ordered to sit forthwith. On the 12th, an addition was made to it. On the 13th, in a paper read to the Continental Congress, it apprised them of the proposition under discussion to fit out armed vessels. The committee reported on the 12th. On the 14th, the report was considered and postponed till three o'clock, when the committees of safety and supplies were in session. A very long debate on the report then took place, and further consideration of it was postponed until the 15th. The battle of Bunker Hill prevented further action. Nothing beyond building a few boats:

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]



have been done until after this period,—among them, barges called fire-boats.\*

On October 13, 1775, the Continental Congress ordered two small cruisers to be fitted out for the purpose of intercepting supplies intended for the British. On the 29th of the same month a resolution was passed, by which merchant vessels were prohibited from flying pennants in presence of continental ships, and the day following two more cruisers, larger than those first authorized, were ordered to be equipped. The wanton burning of Falmouth (Portland) by the English under Admiral Graves, prompted Congress to pass a general prize-law, by which the capture of British vessels was authorized, and on December 13th the construction of fourteen additional cruisers was authorized.

"By the close of the year 1775, Congress had authorized the equipment of seventeen men-of-war, varying in force from ten to thirty guns. These ships, however, were much inferior to what vessels of the same rate would be now. Their armaments were light sixes, nines, or twelves, caronades not having yet been introduced. A serious difficulty was found in procuring suitable officers. Competent seamen there were enough, but officers accustomed to the discipline of a navy were rare: indeed, except a few who had left the royal service before the war, none were to be had. A large number of Americans, it is true, were in the British navy, where they occupied all ranks, from that of a midshipman up to post-captain; but there is only a single authenticated instance of such a person having thrown up his commission. Congress was accordingly compelled to select its officers principally from such masters and mates of merchant-vessels as were most conspicuous for seamanship, presumed courage, habits of enterprise, and the capacity for command."†

\* Frothingham's *Siege of Boston*, iii.

† Peterson's *American Navy*.

One officer of the right sort was speedily found: a person of John Barry, a native of Wexford, Ireland, having followed the sea from his youth, was then in command of the *Black Prince* of Philadelphia. He was regarded by those best qualified to judge, as eminently fitted by his skill and patriotism, for the position of a commander in the infant navy and was honored with one of the first naval commissions given by Congress. He promptly took up "the finest ship and the first employ in America," entered into the service of his country "with alacrity," and him was committed the duty of superintending the outfit of the first American fleet, a difficult one, but performed by him with rare ability. When this task was completed he was appointed to the command of the brig *Lexington*, sixteen guns, in which vessel he left the capes of Delaware on his first cruise as a naval officer, in February, 1776. It was the "first armed continental ship that went to sea to honor long claimed for the squadron under Commodore Hopkins, but in violation of the truth."\* On April 19th he fell in with the British armed tender *Edwards*, which was captured after a hot action of over an hour. This was the first capture of any English vessel of war by an American cruiser commissioned by the Continental Congress. His reputation was so much enhanced by this that he was soon after given command of the *Essex*, one of the three large frigates then building at Philadelphia, but as during the severe winter his ship, when finished, was kept ice-bound in the Delaware, he joined the army when navigation opened, acting as aid to Gen. Cadwalader, and rendering efficient service in the operations in the vicinity of Trenton. When the British army under Lord Cornwallis took possession of Philadelphia, it was thought neces-

\* *Ibid.*



send the American vessels of war up the Delaware and they were, accordingly, removed to Whitehall. About this time the English Commander, recognizing the great abilities of Barry, caused an offer to be made to him of fifteen thousand guineas (\$76,000) and the command of a British ship of the line, if he would abandon the Revolutionary cause. But the faithful Irishman spurned the tempter's proposal, and indignantly replied "I have devoted myself to the cause of my country, and not the value or command of the whole British fleet can seduce me from it." Soon after this, he gave the English a proof that they had not underestimated his talents by performing an act which has been justly regarded as unequalled during the war, for boldness of design and dexterity of execution. With only twenty-eight men in four boats he pulled down the river, intending to strike a blow at some of the enemy's vessels anchored near Philadelphia. He was noticed when passing the city, but dashing on, escaped without injury, and met off Port Penn a British schooner of ten guns, with four transports loaded with supplies for Howe's army. He boarded and captured the schooner and seized the transports, but just then, two more of the enemy's cruisers approached, on which he destroyed his prize and escaped back to his post without the loss of a man. "The courage that inspired this small and heroic band," says the *National Portrait Gallery*, "is not alone sufficient to account for his wonderful success, but it must be ascribed to a combination of daring bravery and consummate skill by which the diminutive power under his command was directed with unerring rapidity and irresistible force." \*

\* For this daring exploit, Barry received the following letter from the Commander-in-chief:

HEADQUARTERS, 12th March, 1778.

"To CAPTAIN JOHN BARRY—

"Sir: I have received your favor of the 9th inst., and congratulate

The British having succeeded in destroying the *Fly* and the other ships at Whitehall, Barry was appointed the command of the *Raleigh*, of thirty-two guns. He sailed from Boston in his new ship on September 25th, 1777, the day following he encountered two English vessels, which he had a long and desperate conflict, but was compelled to run his ship ashore in order to avoid them. One of the enemy's vessels carried fifty guns and the other twenty-eight. Congress soon after appointed him to the command of a seventy-four, then building, but it was concluded to present her to the King of France, and she was transferred to the *Alliance* of thirty-six guns, to serve as a frigate in the United States service. In her he fought and captured the English ships *Atlanta* and *Trepassy* in a hotly contested action. This was considered the most brilliant naval battle of the year. In 1782, when returning from Havana, he encountered a British squadron and disabled one of the frigates which belonged to the British vessel's commander, Vaughan, afterwards Admiral. He declared some years after that he had never seen a more gallantly fought as was the *Alliance* during that conflict. On that occasion that Barry, when hailed by a British officer with the question "What ship is that?" replied "The United States ship *Alliance*, saucy Jack

you on the success which has crowned your gallantry and a late attack upon the enemy's ships. Although circumstances prevented you from reaping the full benefits of your conquest, I am glad to find you have obtained ample consolation in the degree of glory which you have achieved. I will be pleased to accept of my thanks for the good things which were so polite as to send me, with my own wishes that a successful issue may always attend your bravery.

"I am sir, &c.,

GEO. WASHINGTON.



-----

half-Irishman and half-Yankee—who — — are you?"\* After the Revolution Barry continued as senior officer at the head of the navy until his death.†

Capt. Burke, who was appointed by Congress in February, 1776, commander of the *Warner*, one of the four vessels then ready for service, showed himself an efficient and active officer during the war.

Capt. Benjamin Dunn and Lieutenant John Fanning also received commissions from Congress in 1776, and distinguished themselves in various engagements, as did several other Irish-American naval officers.

Among the naval commanders supplied by Rhode Island for the navy in the Revolution, were Captains Murphy, Stacey, Read and Simmons, Irish-Americans, who showed themselves to be brave and skillful in the performance of their duties.

\* "This is the ship *Alliance*  
From Philadelphia town,  
And proudly bids defiance  
To England's king and crown.  
As Captain on the deck I stand  
To guard her banner true,  
Half Yankee and half Irishman;  
What tyrant's slave are you?"—*Collins*.

† John Barry, "the Father of the American Navy," was born at Tacumshane, Wexford county, Ireland, in 1745. He early conceived a fondness for a sea-faring life, and was placed at a youthful age on board of a merchantman, sailing between Philadelphia and Cork. By attention to his duties, as well as by study, he soon fitted himself for the command of a ship, and was made in 1770, when only 25 years old, Captain of the *Black Prince*, owned by Reese Meredith, of Philadelphia, father of Samuel Meredith, of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick, of that city. General Washington, on his visits to Philadelphia, always stayed at the house of Mr. Meredith, and thus he became acquainted with young Barry and his abilities. The Commodore died in 1803, and was interred in St. Mary's Cemetery, where his monument may still be seen. He died

In 1778, Capt. James McGee, while commanding service of the Commonwealth," was shipwrecked in chusetts Bay and seventy-two of his men lost. The survivors were very kindly treated by the inhabitants of Plymouth, who also "decently buried such bodies recovered." Capt. McGee was a member, and in 1811 president of the Charitable Irish Society of Boston.

childless, and left the greater part of his property to the Catholic Asylum of Philadelphia. Like the illustrious Charles Carroll, ton, he was remarkable through life for the strict performance of his religious duties.

The following, relating to the death of one of Barry's old taken from Nallette's *History and Reminiscences of the P. Navy Yard* (fourth paper): *Potter's Am. Monthly*, April, 1870.

"On Monday, September 11th, 1820, colors were placed out of respect to the memory of Lieutenant James Traut, who attached to the Yard. It is related of this officer that from the formation of the navy until the close of the War of 1812 sailing-mas'ter in our service—an Irishman by birth, and is believed to have come to this country in the year 1781, with Captain Barry's *Alliance*. Few persons have given rise to more traditions of eccentricities and his gallantry. His whole life was passed about ships, and his prejudices and habits were as thorough as those of 'Pipes' himself. For England and Englishmen he had to the last the most unmitigated hatred, with an Irishman's sense of wrongs done to Ireland. He was usually supposed to be of stern disposition, but he was not without some of the fine human nature. He had been in numerous actions, and was remarkable for decision and intrepidity. Owing to the latter, he was once captured while in charge of a vessel called the *Julia*. At the close of his eventful life, which extended to seventy years, he received the commission of a lieutenant, an honor that repaid him for the hardships he had undergone, and all the dangers he had passed before his death, which took place in this city on Sunday, November 10th, at nine o'clock in the evening, it is stated that he expressed a wish that his body be carried into blue water, and there consigned to the bed."



Matthew Mease, of Philadelphia, brother of James Mease, one of the founders of the famous First Troop of Cavalry of that city, and of John Mease, distinguished for gallant conduct at Trenton, entered the American navy and served under Paul Jones. He was severely wounded in the fight between the *Bon Homme Richard* and the *Serapis* off Flamborough Head.\*

On the peace establishment, previous to 1801, are found the names of Captains Barry, McNeil, Barron, Mullowney, and James Barron; Lieutenants Ross, McElroy, McRea, O'Driscoll, Byrne, Somers, McCutchen, and McClelland; Midshipmen McDonough, Roach, Carroll, Magrath, Fleming, Hartigan, Hennessy, Dunn, O'Brien, Walsh, Blakely, T. McDonough, T. Moore, C. Moore, Rossiter, McConnell, Blake, Kearney, and Casey,—all Irish, by birth or parentage.†

\* Matthew Mease was born in Strabane, County Tyrone, Ireland, and emigrated at an early age to America, settling in Philadelphia. Though educated for a merchant, he became purser of the *Bon Homme Richard*, under Paul Jones. In the desperate encounter between that vessel and the *Serapis*, not relishing the thought of being an idle spectator of the engagement, he obtained from Jones the command of the quarter-deck guns, which were served under him, until he was carried below to the cock-pit, dangerously wounded on the head by a splinter. He died in Philadelphia in 1787. His name is on the list of original members of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick, of Philadelphia.

† McGee. Early Irish Letters in America.

## CHAPTER XVI.

HALF THE CONTINENTAL ARMY COMPOSED OF IRISH-  
CANS.—25,000 ANGLO-AMERICANS ARMED AGAINST  
COUNTRYMEN.—WASHINGTON AND HIS IRISH FRIENDS.

TESTIMONY of the most convincing kind, from undoubted as well as friendly sources, establishes the fact that half the Revolutionary Army was composed of men of Irish birth or descent. George Washington Parke Custis, in a review of the operations of the war—I mean the soldiers' part of the coming of the French, Ireland had furnished in the War of Independence. Let the Shamrock honored be the old and good services of the sons in the War of Independence. Let the Shamrock twined with the laurels of the Revolution; and to justice guiding the pen of history inscribe on the America's remembrance, *Eternal gratitude to Irishmen*.

Joseph Galloway, who, although he had been a member of the first Continental Congress, afterwards abandoned the national cause and became a bitter Loyalist, was examined before a Committee of the London House of Commons on June 16, 1779, on various matters connected with the Revolution. Amongst other questions he was asked, "were the troops in the service of the Congress chiefly composed of? Were they natives of America or of the greatest part of them English, Scotch, or Irish?" He replied: "I can answer the question with per-

\* Personal Recollections.





There were scarcely one fourth natives of America, about one half Irish, the other fourth English and Scotch." \*

Major General Robertson was examined before the same committee on the 19th of August following, and was asked by Lord George Germaine, "How are the principal corps composed? Are they mostly native Americans or emigrants from various nations of Europe?" The officer replied, "Some of the corps consist mostly of natives, others, I believe the greater number, are enlisted from such people as can be got in the country and many of them may be emigrants. I remember Gen. Lee telling me that half the rebel army were from Ireland." †

Ramsay says, "that the Irish in America were almost to a man on the side of Independence. They had fled from oppression in their native country and could not brook the idea that it should follow them." Plowden asserts "that most of the early successes (of the patriots) in America, were immediately owing to the vigorous exertions and prowess of the Irish emigrants who bore arms in that cause." ‡

Even Froude, Ireland's most malignant traducer, declares that according to "all evidence" the foremost, the most irreconcilable, the most determined in pushing the quarrel to the last extremity, were those evicted tenants whom "the (Anglican) bishops and Lord Donegal and Company had been pleased to drive out of Ulster." § And he suggests the possibility—as indeed he might assume the certainty—that some exile from the vicinity of the Irish Bunker Hill, near Belfast, first gave that name to the historic height at Boston, where the "raw American rebels," until their ammunition gave out, proved themselves more than a match for

\* Journals of House of Commons.

† Hist. Am. Revolution, 597.

‡ Plowden, Vol. ii. 198.

§ Froude "Hist. of Ireland," vol. i. 140.

the best troops of England. None dared to dispute the assertion of Lord Mountjoy in the House of Commons when he told the Ministers, "You have lost America through the Irish," yet this fact seemed only to enrage the men of his class against those who sought to free the country, for he went at the head of his regiment to crush down the insurrection of '98, and lost his life at the battle of New Ross fighting against the cause of Irish independence. In the Revolutionary struggle the evicted tenants, newly arrived, displayed no less bravery or fidelity than did the men of their race who were descended from those whom the persecutions and confiscations of Cromwell and William of Orange had driven from Ireland. At the battle of Long Island, for instance "the Delaware battalion," commanded by Col. Haslett, was composed principally of raw Irishmen who scarcely knew how to load a musket, yet those men, undrilled and undisciplined, fought with steel and clubbed musket to the death.

Bearing in mind what has been stated in previous chapters with regard to emigration from Ireland to America, especially that in the years 1771, 1772, and 1773, not less than a hundred thousand Irish immigrants landed on these shores, driven from their homes by landlord cruelties and evictions, it will appear evident that Galloway's testimony does more than justice to Irish-American patriotism. We may safely conclude then, that of the two hundred and thirty thousand men furnished for the Continental army in the various States during the war, one-half, or one hundred and fifty thousand, were of the Irish race.

It may not be out of place here to refer to the erroneous opinion, still too prevalent, that the number of Tories and Loyalists in the colonies amounted only to an insignificant

\* Memoirs Hist. Society of Long Island.



minority of the people. The truth of the matter is, that in some States the Tories out-numbered the "Rebels," as can easily be demonstrated. The *Historic Essay*, which Sabine prefixes to his work on the *Loyalists of the American Revolution*, contains such evidences as the following. With regard to Massachusetts, it seems to have been taken for granted, that because here the Revolution had its origin—that the people embraced the popular side almost in a mass. A more mistaken opinion than this has seldom prevailed. Upwards of eleven hundred loyalists retired in a body with the royal army at the evacuation of Boston, and other emigrations preceded and succeeded this. Maine had a considerable number of Tories—numbers of whom were proscribed and banished. In passing from Maine to New Hampshire we find the general state of things very similar.

"In Connecticut, the number of adherents of the crown was greater, in proportion to the population, than in Maine, Massachusetts, or New Hampshire.

"Rhode Island approached nearer the democratic standard than any of those already mentioned; though here, too, the King had supporters by no means insignificant. The political institutions in New York, which formed there a feudal aristocracy, were calculated to give the Tory party many adherents. Numbers entered the service of the Crown and fought in its defence. Whole battalions, and even regiments, were raised by the great landholders, and continued organized and in pay throughout the struggle. In fine, New York was undeniably the Loyalists' stronghold, and contained more of them than any other colony.

"Regarding the Tories, who opposed the Rebels in the field, our writers of history have been almost silent; and it is not impossible that some persons have read books devoted exclusively to an account of the Revolution, without so much as imagining that a part, and a considerable part

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

of the force employed to suppress the 'rebellion,' composed of our countrymen. From the best evidence I have been able to obtain, I conclude that there were at the lowest computation, 25,000 Americans who took up arms against their countrymen, and in aid of England. In fact the addresses then presented by Loyalists to His Majesty informed him that quite as many, if not more, Americans had joined the armies of King George as had entered the ranks raised by the 'rebel' Congress!"\*

To this it may be added that of the thirty-seven newspapers published in America in 1775, twelve were in favour of English rule, twenty-three on the side of the patriots and two were neutral.

It is gratifying to note the warm and kindly regard with which Washington almost invariably entertained and manifested towards his Irish officers and soldiers, as well as towards his fellow citizens of the same race in civil life, and even their kindred in the Old Land. His choice of Reed, Moy, and Fitzgerald, as aids, his affection for Knox, and the high esteem of Sullivan, Hand, Wayne and others, were only too fully displayed and always in the most gratifying manner.

It was his kindness to and regard for the feelings of his humblest comrades—the Irish of the rank and file—less marked when at the camp, at Cambridge, they became excited and indignant over the projected burning of the effigy of Pope, on what the English call Guy Fawkes' day, in 1774. The commander-in-chief speedily allayed their anger, and shamed those who sought to abuse their forbearance by issuing the following order.

"November 5th.—As the Commander-in-chief has been apprised of a design formed for the observance of this ridiculous and childish custom of burning the effigy of Pope, he cannot help expressing his surprise that the

\* Sabine's *Loyalists of the American Revolution*.



should be officers and soldiers in this army so void of common sense as not to see the impropriety of such a step. \* \* \* \* It is so monstrous as not to be suffered, or excused; indeed, instead of offering the most remote insult, it is our duty to address public thanks to our (Catholic) brethren; as to them we are indebted for every late success over the common enemy in Canada." \*

When the British were driven out of Boston, on the 17th of March, 1776, the commander-in-chief, gratified the national feeling of his Irish soldiers, by giving "St. Patrick" as the countersign, and naming Gen. Sullivan as "Brigadier of the day."

In his life-guard, formed in 1776, soon after the siege of Boston, when the American Army was encamped on Manhattan Island, near the City of New York, Washington had many Irish. It consisted of a Major's command, one hundred and eighty men. These were selected with special reference to their physical, moral, and intellectual character, and it was considered a mark of peculiar distinction to belong to the *Commander-in-Chief's Guard*. The corps varied in numbers at different periods. During the winter of 1779-80, when the American army under Washington, was cantoned at Morristown, in close proximity to the enemy, it was increased to two hundred and fifty. In the spring it was reduced to its original number, and in 1783, the last year of service, it consisted of only sixty-four non-commissioned officers and privates. Care was always taken to have all the States, from which all the Continental army was supplied with troops, represented in this corps. The following names of Irish soldiers are taken from the muster roll, 4th of June, 1783: E. Carrolton, T. Manning, J. Crosby, David Brown, S. Daily, D. Manning, Peter Halt, Jer. Brown, J. Moore, Samuel Baily, Wm. Martin, Robt.

\* Washington's Writings.

# THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

Blair, John Fenton, Charles Dougherty, Wm. K. John Dowther, John Patton, Hugh Cull, James John Finch, Denis Moriarty, John Montgomery, Hennessy, Jeremiah Driscoll, Thomas Gillen.

On December 17, 1781, Washington was und adopted a member of the Friendly Sons of St. Philadelphia. Before giving an account of what on the occasion, something may be said of the the members of this famous organization.

The Society of the Friendly Sons held its first September 17, 1771, when Stephen Moylan, General, brother to the Catholic Bishop of Cork, was President, as already stated.

"With the exception of its honorary membership" says the *Account of the Friendly Sons of* "was composed of Irishmen or of those whose parents of them) were Irish. They were, for the most part fortune,' and associated on terms of familiarity, and equality, with the first men of the province included among them the very best men of the country is not, therefore, a matter of surprise to find many occupying the highest and most responsible stations in the army, navy, cabinet, and in Congress, and a 'distinguished for their firm adherence to the cause of liberty in which they embarked' with ability, unsurpassed in those days of intense

"The objects of the society were social and Want and distress being, at the time of its formation did not require, so much as now, the union of into associations for the purpose of charity. be a great mistake to infer from this that the a useless one. As well might we condemn as friendly intercourse which gives a zest to the of business and the stern requisitions of duty 'those happy meetings when' (to use the words of Curran in reference to similar scenes), 'the society conceived and communicated the pure and good



pose, the innocent enjoyment of social mirth expanded into the nobler warmth of social virtue, and the horizon of the board became enlarged into the horizon of man.' Certainly an association could not be deemed useless which brought together, in familiar contact, such men as Dickinson, Barry, Morris, Wayne, Fitzsimmons, Peters, the Moylans, Hopkinson, and many others distinguished for their genius, talents, wit and patriotism: which bound them together by the tie of friendship, and made them acquainted with the character and qualifications of each other.

"The regular meetings of the society were held on the 17th days of March, June, September and December. Each member was required to furnish himself with a gold medal, of the value of three guineas, agreeably to the following description: On the right, Hibernia; on the left, America; in the center, Liberty joining the hands of Hibernia and America, represented by the usual figures of a female supported by a harp, for Hibernia; an Indian with his quiver on his back and his bow slung, for America; underneath, Unite. On the reverse, St. Patrick trampling on a snake, a cross in his hand, dressed in pontificalibus, the motto, 'Hiar.'

"These devices, designed some years before the Revolution, were certainly ominous, if not prophetic. The Goddess of Liberty joining the hands of Hibernia and America, with the superscription 'Unite,' was sufficiently significant, considering that the effect of that union powerfully promoted the subsequent dismemberment of the British empire and the liberty and independence of America. The motto *Hiar*, or, without the aspirate, *Iar*, in the Celtic language signifies, 'West,' and from it, according to some writers, came the name of the country, Eire, Erin, or Ireland, and Ierna, aspirated Hibernia.

"This medal the members were obliged to wear at the meetings of the society under the penalty of 7s. 6d. for neglect to do so on St. Patrick's day, and 5s. on the days of the quarterly meetings.

"Ten honorary members were eligible. The qualifications for ordinary members were that the applicant should be a descendant of Irish parents on either side in the first degree, or a descendant of a member *ad infinitum* (honorary

members excepted). So that the applicant must either have been a native of Ireland himself or one of his parents must have been so, or he must have been a descendant of a member. Honorary members could not vote, and were not subject to fines.

"The meetings of the society continued to be regularly held till December, 1775. At this time the revolutionary feeling had become intense, and the side which the members of the Society of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick had taken is very unequivocally indicated by the record of their proceedings at the meeting of December 17, 1775. 'A motion was made and seconded that Thos. Batt, a member of this Society, should be expelled for taking an active part against the liberties of America; the determination was postponed till the next meeting, in order for a more deliberate consideration.' At the next meeting, March, 1776, 'the question being put upon the motion made at the last stated meeting, whether Capt. Thomas Batt be expelled from the Society, it was unanimously carried in the affirmative.' At this meeting there were present twenty-one members, among them Generals Wayne, Shee, and Nixon, and several of the First Troop of Philadelphia Cavalry.

"The pent-up flames of the war at last burst forth, and most of the members of the Society of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick became participants and actors in the stirring scenes that followed.

"The festivities of the society, the wit, the song and the joke, yielded to the stern requisitions of duty, and the excitement of the banquet was succeeded by that of danger, battle, and glory. The minutes of the society come down regularly to the meeting of June 17, 1776. Here there is a gap until September 17, 1778, with this only entry, namely: 'The State of Pennsylvania having been invaded, and the city of Philadelphia taken by the British army under the command of General Sir Wm. Howe, in September, 1777, the society had no meeting until September, 1778. The meetings from September, 1778, until the end of the war, were regularly held, and though those who were in the army and navy are generally noted as absent, yet we find many of them snatching occasional moments of enjoyment, amid the hardships of war, in a reunion at the festivals of the

[REDACTED]



society. '*Absent in camp,*' '*absent at sea,*' are frequent entries opposite the names of members, and at the meeting of the 17th of June, 1779, it was 'agreed that such members of the society as are officers in the army, shall not be subject to fines for absence while in service in the field.' Gen. Wayne was present at this meeting, as were several members of the First Troop—Colonel Walter Stewart, John Patton, Com. Barry, and Mr. John Dunlap, afterward Capt. of the First Troop.

"Intimately connected with the glory of the Society of the Sons of St. Patrick, is the magnificent proof of the generosity and patriotism of its members, already referred to, in subscribing nearly half a million of dollars, to provide for supplying the Revolutionary army with provisions.

"At length the clouds which had hung heavily over the liberties of America began to be dissipated by the glorious sunburst of victory, and the surrender of Cornwallis extinguished the last hope of the British in America. Once more the convivial reunions of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick revived, and in the winter of 1781-2, commenced a series of brilliant entertainments, continued at intervals for several years, which fairly entitle this epoch to the appellation of the Golden Age of the society.

"Gen. Washington had now become acquainted with the talents, courage and patriotic devotion of most of the members of the society; not, to be sure, at the festive board, but on many a hard-fought field, and by the substantial evidence of pounds, shillings and pence. The steady courage of Moylan, Irvine and Nixon, the impetuous boldness of Wayne, the fiery valor of Thompson, Stewart, and Butler, the efficient services of the First Troop, were fully appreciated by the calm observation of Washington. These had all been among his dearest companions-in-arms—and a fellowship in danger, hardship and victory already united them to him by the strongest ties of affection. It was very natural therefore, that, when these Sons of St. Patrick met, during the short intervals of war, and at the close of each campaign, they should desire that he who had been their commander, their companion, and their friend amid other scenes, should unite in their festive enjoyments, to smoothe the brow so long furrowed with care but now crowned with laurels.

"Accordingly, at a meeting of the president of the society and his council, on the 7th December, 1781, Gen. Washington, being then in Philadelphia by the request of the secretary was directed to invite his Excellency, in the name of the society, to dinner, on the 17th of January at the City Tavern. Gen. Washington was pre-occupied with pressing public business from accepting this invitation, but on the 17th, however, a numerous meeting of the society was held, and dined at Evans' Tavern. General Hand was proposed as members, and afterward duly elected. The same evening, His Excellency Gen. Washington unanimously adopted a member of the society. He ordered that the president, vice-president and secretary should present him with a medal in the name of the society, and that they invite his Excellency and his suite to a banquet to be prepared and given him at the City Tavern on Tuesday, the first of January (1782), to which the secretary is requested to invite the President of the Congress, the Minister of France, M. Marbois, the Chief-Justice, the Speaker of the House of Representatives, Mr. Francis Rendon, M. Holker, Count de la Tour, Count Dillon, with all the general officers that were in the city."

In pursuance of this order the president and council waited on General Washington with the following

"*May it please your Excellency:*

"The Society of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick, ambitious to testify, with all possible respect, the sense they entertain of your Excellency's public virtues, have taken the liberty to adopt your Excellency as a member.

"Although they have not the clothing of a monarch, nor the splendor of temporal power, yet they flatter themselves, that they are the genuine offspring of hearts filled with the warmest sentiments, that this mark of their esteem and respect be wholly unacceptable to your Excellency.

"Impressed with these pleasing hopes, they



me to present to your Excellency a gold medal, the ensign of this fraternal society, which, that you may be pleased to accept, and long live to wear, is the warmest wish of

"Your Excellency's most humble and respectful servant,  
"By order and in behalf of the Society.

"GEO. CAMPBELL, President."

"To His Excellency Gen. Washington, Commander-in-Chief of the Allied Army."

To which His Excellency was pleased to give the following answer, namely:

"SIR:—I accept with singular pleasure the Ensign of so worthy a fraternity as that of the Sons of St. Patrick in this city—a society distinguished for the firm adherence of its members to the glorious cause in which we are embarked.

"Give me leave to assure you, sir, that I shall never cast my eyes upon the badge with which I am honored, but with a grateful remembrance of the polite and affectionate manner in which it was presented.

"I am, with respect and esteem,

"Sir, your most obedient servant,

"GEORGE WASHINGTON."

"To George Campbell, Esq., President of the Society of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick."

After which the president having requested the honor of His Excellency's company, together with the gentlemen of his suite, at dinner, at the City Tavern, on Tuesday, the 1st of January, he was pleased to accept the invitation, and, according to the order of last meeting, the secretary sent cards to all the persons therein specified, requesting the pleasure of their company at same place and time, namely, four o'clock.

At an extra meeting at George Evans', on Tuesday, the 1st of January, 1782, the following gentlemen were present:

His Excellency General Washington, Gen. Lincoln, Gen. Steuben, Gen. Howe, Gen. Moultrie, Gen. Knox, Gen.

Hand, Gen. M'Intosh, His Excellency M. Luzerne. M. Rendon, His Excellency M. Hanson, His Excellency Wm. Moore, Mr. Muhlenbergh, Col. French Tilghman, Col. Smith, Major Washington, Count Dillon, Count De la Touche, M. Marbois, M. Otto, M. Holker—21 guests.

Geo. Campbell, Esq., president; Mr. Thos. Fitzsimmons, V. P.; Wm. West, Matthew Mease, John Mease, John Mitchell, J. M. Nesbitt, John Nixon, Samuel Caldwell, Andrew Caldwell, Mr. James Mease, Sharp Delany, Esq., Mr. D. H. Conyngham, Mr. George Henry, Mr. Blair M'Clenachan, Mr. Alexander Nesbitt, Mr. John Donaldson, Mr. John Barclay, Mr. James Crawford, Mr. John Patton, Mr. James Caldwell, Mr. John Dunlap, Mr. Hugh Shiell, Mr. George Hughes, Mr. M. M. O'Brien, Jasper Moylan, Esq., Col. Ephraim Blaine, Col. Charles Stewart, Col. Walter Stewart, Col. Francis Johnson, Dr. John Cochran, Mr. Wm. Constable, Henry Hill, Esq., Robert Morris, Esq., Samuel Meredith, Esq.—35 members.

"This brilliant entertainment, it will be seen, was graced by the presence of the bravest and most distinguished generals of the allied army of America and France. The French and Spanish ministers, with their secretaries, etc., were also present. Several of the First Troop (members of the Society), Colonels Charles and Walter Stewart; Colonels Blaine and Johnston, with Robert Morris, Samuel Meredith, and Henry Hill, honorary members.

"The next regular meeting (the anniversary meeting of the Society) was held at George Evans', on Monday, the 28th March, 1782—and was even more brilliant than the preceding one. Gen. Washington, was present with Generals Lincoln, Dickinson, Moultrie and Baron Steuben; Messrs. Muhlenberge, Moore and Hanson; Capt. Truxton, of the Navy, etc. Of the honorary members, John Dickinson, Robert Morris, Samuel Meredith, and Henry Hill, were



CONFIDENTIAL

present. Com. Barry is mentioned as beyond sea, and Wayne, Butler, Irvine, and Cochran, at camp.

Amongst the prominent members of the Friendly Sons not hitherto mentioned were the following:

John Mease, brother of Matthew, already mentioned, was born in Strabane, Ireland; came to this country in the year 1754, and, for many years was an eminent shipping merchant of Philadelphia. He was an early and an ardent friend to the cause of independence, and one of the original members of the First Troop of City Cavalry. On the ever-memorable night of the 25th of December, 1776, he was one of twenty-four of that corps who crossed the Delaware with the troops under General Washington when the Hessians were captured.

Mr. Mease was one of five detailed to the service of keeping alive the fires along the line of the American encampment at Trenton to deceive the enemy, while the Americans marched by a private route to attack their rear-guard at Princeton. He served with the troop until the end of the war, and suffered great loss of property in his warehouses and dwelling. For the last thirty years of his life he was one of the admiralty surveyors of the port of Philadelphia, and died in 1826, at the advanced age of 86. He subscribed £4,000 to supply the army in 1780. Mr. John Mease was the only man who continued, in the latter days, to wear the old three-cornered hat of the revolution, and was familiarly called "*the last of the cocked hats.*"

Thos. Fitzsimmons was a native of Ireland and a Catholic. He was an extensive merchant of Philadelphia before and during the revolution, commanded a volunteer company and was engaged in active service during the war. After the war he was for many years a member of the State Legislature, and represented Philadelphia in Congress with distinction. He was for a long time a director in the Bank

of North America, and president of the Insurance Company of North America, in which latter office he continued to his death. He was a man of high and honorable character and his influence in the country, and especially among merchants, was second to none. He married a daughter of George Meade, and died without issue.

Mr. Fitzsimmons was one of the most efficient men who laid the foundations of the commercial and financial systems of the United States. He and Mr. Goodwin, of Salem, though they spoke but seldom and briefly in Congress for facts and the correction of errors in practical questions of commerce, exchange, and the operation of legislative measures in relation to the same, had always been a counselor and adviser of Franklin, Adams, Jefferson, etc., the coadjutor of Robert Morris. His vision of the future prosperity of these United States, is fame that few of those times could aspire to, and yet is nothing more than what may with justice be claimed for Thomas Fitzsimmons. His house, namely, George Meade & Co., subscribed for the army, in 1780, £5,000. His name is attached to the Constitution of the United States and to the introduction of the Catholics to Washington.

An interesting incident in the life of Fitzsimmons was his faithful friendship for Robert Morris, who, although an Englishman, became an honorary member of the Friendly Sons. Of the latter, Bolter, in his *War of Independence*, marks, "The Americans certainly owed and still owe a great acknowledgment to the financial operations of Robert Morris as to the negotiations of Franklin or, almost to the same extent, of Washington." But after all his service he was not in his hour of need. Washington wished to make him Secretary of the Treasury, but he declined. He finally became embarrassed, and was thrown into prison for debt.

[REDACTED]

Says Sir Rom de Camden in his *Memorable Facts in the Lives of Eminent Americans*:

"During his incarceration few of his former friends evinced the least interest in him or his troubles; among the few the most attentive until he, too, became a prisoner, was his partner in the disastrous land speculations, John Nicholson; but another deserves special mention, because his friendship was of that purely unselfish type which is far too rare, and ever wins, as it merits, the respect of all, even of those incapable of emulating it—I allude to Thomas Fitzsimmons, an Irishman by birth, a Catholic in religion, a thorough American in devoted love to the Colonies and to their successors, the United States, and withal a noble-hearted man; a successful merchant, of the firm of George Meade & Co., of Philadelphia, he served with credit as a captain in the Revolutionary army; a man of enlightened views, he was a popular legislator, serving in the State Legislature, in the National Congress, and in the Convention for drafting the Constitution of the United States. He was at this time a merchant, not wealthy, but influential and successful; had his means been equal to his large heart, or had there been a number more like him, Mr. Morris would not have lain four years in prison. As it was, he was the great man's steadfast, constant, trusted friend, and as such frequently visited him in prison, comforted, advised and strengthened him."—*Potter's American Monthly*, Vol. vi., Feb. 26.

It makes an Irish-American as proud to read of this fidelity to a friend in adversity as of the heroism shown by the bravest on the battle-field.

John Maxwell Nesbitt. This eminent merchant and devoted patriot was a native of the North of Ireland, who emigrated to America before the revolution. In 1777 he joined the First Troop of Philadelphia Cavalry. He conducted one of the most extensive mercantile houses in Philadelphia,

under the firm of J. M. Nesbitt & Co., during the afterward under the name of Conyngham & Nesbitt, embarked his all in the cause of liberty, and with patriotism not exceeded in history, fearlessly stake his fortune, and, what he valued more than both, honor, on the success of America. His benefactions to the cause had in them a simple greatness which should be in memory dear to America in every future age, as while living, beloved and trusted by all his countrymen. Mention has been made of the formation of the United States Bank for the supply of the army of the United States with provisions, to which J. M. Nesbitt & Co. subscribed £5,000. But before that event Mr. Nesbitt had rendered most essential service to the army. Related in Lingard's *Reg. of Pa.*, vol. 6, p. 28: "So the distress of the American army in 1780 that General Washington was apprehensive that they would not be able to keep the field. The army, however, was saved by a combination of providential circumstances. General Mifflin having written to Richard Peters, Esq., for full information of the state of the army, that gentleman immediately called on J. M. Nesbitt, Esq., and related to him the distress of the army and the wishes of the general." Mr. Nesbitt replied "that a Mr. Howe, of Philadelphia, had offered to put up pork for him if he could be paid in gold." Mr. Howe performed his engagement, and J. M. Nesbitt & Co. paid him accordingly. Nesbitt told Mr. Peters that he might have this pork, and, in addition, a valuable prize just arrived from the ship *the Murray*, laden with provisions. "I will tell you," continues Mr. Hazard's correspondent, "that Mr. Peters was with the result of the a

[REDACTED]



*The provisions were sent in time and the army was saved.* Mr. Nesbitt was a faithful coadjutor of Robert Morris during the war, in the supply of money and necessities for the army and in the support of public credit, when Mr. Morris acted as financier."

Mr. Nesbitt was the second president of the Society of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick, succeeding General Moylan in 1773, and served at that time for one year. He was re-elected president of the society in June, 1782, and continued to be re-elected annually until his resignation in March, 1796, having been president of the society, altogether, for nearly fifteen years. He was one of the founders of the Hibernian Society.

Gen. John Shee was a native of Ireland and a merchant in Philadelphia, in partnership with Richard Bache (one of the honorary members), the son-in-law of Dr. Benjamin Franklin. He was taken prisoner at Fort Washington, York Island, after the battle of Long Island.

Mr. Jefferson appointed him Collector of the Port of Philadelphia. He was afterward a general in the militia, Colonel of volunteers, and treasurer of the city.

Blair McClenachan was a native of Ireland. He was in business in Philadelphia before the Revolution, but on the breaking out of the war engaged in privateering, in which he was very successful. He was most ardent and devoted to the cause of liberty, and one of the founders of the first troop of Philadelphia city cavalry, in which he served during the war. He co-operated most liberally in all the patriotic exertions and schemes of Robert Morris and his compatriots in urging on, sustaining and establishing the cause of American freedom. He subscribed £10,000 in 1780 to supply the starving army, and on various occasions aided Congress by his money and his credit, and suffered much

thereby in a pecuniary way, though repaid by bation of the whole country and the triumph of

After the war he engaged largely in various operations, and was an extensive shipowner. His exertions, however, resulted in his embarrassment. Clenachan had a large family. One of his daughters married General Walter Stewart. Some of his descendants living in Philadelphia. His granddaughter married Penn Gaskill, of Philadelphia, a member of the Society.

George Meade, a native of Ireland, and a Cambridge highly respectable and wealthy shipowner and Philadelphia, and many years partner in trade with Fitzsimmons, one of the original members. His high character and integrity may be inferred from the following anecdote: About the year 1790 he became embarrassed in his business and failed, owing to the loss of a house in France. His largest creditor was John B. an extensive and liberal merchant of London. Upon his failure Mr. M. wrote to Mr. B. informing him of the condition of his affairs, but expressing a hope that he might yet be able to retrieve his losses. Mr. B. requested Mr. M. not to trouble his mind on account of the debt he already owed, and directed him to draw for £10,000 sterling more. With this generous assistance Mr. Meade was enabled to retrieve his affairs, and had the satisfaction not only to repay Mr. B. but to discharge all his former obligations in full. He was one of the founders of the Hibernian Society, and contributed £5,000 to supply the army with provisions in 1780.

Col. Ephraim Blaine, a native of Ireland, settled in Philadelphia, Pa. "Became a colonel in the American army during the war and was well known in Pennsylvania for his patriotic exertions in the cause of the Revolution."

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

*Friendly Sons.* Was the ancestor of Hon. James G. Blaine, of Maine.

But to pursue the history of the society in further detail would be unnecessary; suffice it to say that the usual conviviality, the elegant hospitality, and the harmony and friendship which had ever characterized the Society, continued until 1796, when the greater number of its members, with several others, formed themselves into a charitable association under the name of "The Hibernian Society for the Relief of Emigrants from Ireland," with the laudable view and intent (to use the words of the charter) to aid and assist poor and oppressed persons emigrating from Ireland into Pennsylvania. The object met the cordial approbation of the authorities, and a charter of incorporation was granted to the society on the 27th April, 1792, signed by Gov. Mifflin, who had frequently experienced the hospitality of the Society of the Friendly Sons of St. Patrick. The preamble recites that "it is highly proper to promote the designs of the said society, inasmuch as they may greatly contribute to the strength and prosperity of this State and of the United States by encouraging emigration from Ireland."

Hon. Thomas McKean, Chief-Justice and afterward Governor of Pennsylvania, was chosen first President of the new society.

In November, 1783, a number of Irishmen, the majority of whom were members of the Irish Volunteers, arrived in New York, and soon after landing "begged leave to extend congratulations to Gov. Clinton on the happy conclusion of the late cruel, oppressive, and unnatural war, and his Excellency's safe return to New York." Continuing they said: "We, armed in a similar cause and with the assistance of this country, contributed to procure the emancipation of our own from the slavery she was long obliged to acquiesce under."

This was signed on behalf of, and at the request of, the Irish Volunteers, and was presented to Gov. Clinton at New York, the 2d of December, 1783, by John Holmes, Secretary," and to it George Clinton, then Governor, responded appropriately.

The same volunteers also addressed Congress at Gen. Washington, who replied as follows:—

"To the Members of the Volunteer Association of the Kingdom of Ireland who have arrived in the city of New York:

"GENTLEMEN: The testimony of your satisfaction at the glorious termination of the late contest, and your opinion of my agency in it, afford me singular merit my warmest acknowledgment. If the example of the Americans, successfully contended in the cause of liberty, can be of any use to other nations, we have an additional motive for rejoicing at so pre-emptive event.

"It was not an uninteresting consideration to the Kingdom of Ireland, by a bold and manly effort, to obtain the redress of many of its grievances. It is much to be wished that the blessings of equal and unrestrained commerce, may yet prevail more generally. In the meantime you may be assured, gentlemen, of the hospitality and beneficence of your countrymen, brethren, who have been prisoners of war, are now known nor unregarded.

"The bosom of America is open to receive, with respect and honor, the opulent and respectable stranger, but the oppressed and persecuted of all nations and religions, whom we welcome to a participation in all our rights and liberties, by decency and propriety of conduct they approach the enjoyment.

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

About the same time Washington received congratulations from various quarters, and society.

\* *New York Gazette*, Dec. 4, 1783, quoted in *New York Times*, 16, 1887.



land itself, to which he made fitting replies, one of which, that to the "Yankee Club" of Stewartstown, Tyrone, will serve to show how highly he appreciated the good will of American friends in Ireland.

MOUNT VERNON, 20 January, 1784.

*To the Yankee Club of Stewartstown, in the County of Tyrone, Ireland.*

GENTLEMEN:—It is with unfeigned satisfaction that I accept your congratulation on the late happy and glorious revolution.

The generous indignation against the foes to the rights of human nature, with which you are animated, and the exalted sentiments of liberty which you entertain, are too consonant to the feelings and principles of the people of the United States of America, not to attract their veneration and esteem, did not the affectionate and anxious concern with which you regarded their struggle for Freedom and Independence, entitle you to their more particular acknowledgements.

If in the course of our successful contest, good consequences have resulted to the oppressed Kingdom of Ireland, it will afford a new source of felicitation to all who respect the interests of humanity.

I am now, gentlemen, to offer you my best thanks for the indulgent sentiments you are pleased to express of my conduct, and for your benevolent wishes concerning my personal welfare, as well as with regard to a more interesting object, the prosperity of my country.

I have the honor to be,

Very sincerely yours,

GEORGE WASHINGTON."

Among the delegates who met at Philadelphia for the purpose of revising the Articles of Confederation and framing a Constitution, there were Thomas Fitzsimmons of Pennsylvania, Daniel Carroll of Maryland, George Read of Delaware, John Rutledge, and Pierce Butler of South Carolina, and other Irish Americans. In compliance with the request

of the delegates. Conventions were called in States, to decide upon the adoption of the new Constitution and soon eleven States, gave their assent. North Carolina did not accept it until 1789. Rhode Island until 1790.

Under the provisions of the new Constitution Washington was unanimously chosen President and inaugurated at New York, where Congress was then in session, on April 30, 1789. Soon after he was presented the following address on behalf of the Catholics of the United States, then almost exclusively of Irish birth or of

*Address of the Catholics to George Washington, President of the United States.*

"Sir: We have been long impatient to testify our unbounded confidence on your being called, by a unanimous vote, to the first station of a country in which unanimity could not have been obtained without previous merit of unexampled services, of eminent talents and unblemished virtue. Our congratulations reached you sooner, because our scattered situation prevented the communication and the collecting of sentiments which warmed every breast. But the opportunity not merely of the happiness to be expected under your administration but of bearing testimony to that which we expected ready. It is your peculiar talent, in war and in peace, to afford security to those who commit their protection to your hands. In war you shield them from the armed hostility; in peace you establish public order by the justice and moderation, not less than by the wisdom of your government. By example, as well as by precept, you extend the influence of laws on the manners of fellow-citizens. You encourage respect for religion by inculcating by words and actions that principle on which the welfare of nations so much depends—that a Supreme Providence governs the events of the world and that the conduct of men is under the eye of an all-wise and all-powerful God. Your exalted maxims and your unwearied attention to the moral and physical improvement of our country have produced already the happy



Under your administration America is animated with zeal for the attainment and encouragement of useful literature; she improves her agriculture, extends her commerce, and acquires with foreign nations a dignity unknown to her before. From these happy events, in which none can feel a warmer interest than ourselves, we derive additional pleasure by recollecting that you, sir, have been the principal instrument to effect so rapid a change in our political situation. This prospect of national prosperity is peculiarly pleasing to us on another account: because, whilst our country preserves her freedom and independence, we shall have a well-founded title to claim from her justice the equal rights of citizenship, as the price of our blood spilt under your eyes, and of our common exertions for her defence under your auspicious conduct; rights rendered more dear to us by the remembrance of former hardships. When we pray for the preservation of them where they have been granted, and expect the full extension of them from the justice of those States which still restrict them; when we solicit the protection of Heaven over our common country we neither admit, nor can omit, recommending your preservation to the singular care of Divine Providence; because we conceive that no human means are so available to promote the welfare of the United States as the prolongation of your health and life, in which are included the energy of your example, the wisdom of your counsels, and the persuasive eloquence of your virtues.

"In behalf of the Catholic clergy,

"J. CARROLL.

"In behalf of the Catholic laity,

"CHARLES CARROLL, of Carrollton.

"DANIEL CARROLL.

"THOMAS FITZSIMMONS.

"DOMINICK LYNCH."

To this President Washington made the following reply.

*Washington's Answer to the Catholics in the United States of America.*

"GENTLEMEN: While I now receive with much satisfaction your congratulations on my being called, by an unanimous vote, to the first station of my country, I cannot but duly notice your politeness in offering an apology for the

unavoidable delay. As that delay has given you opportunity of realizing, instead of anticipating, the wishes of the general government, you will do me the justice to believe that your testimony of the increase of the prosperity enhances the pleasure which I would have experienced from your affectionate address.

"I feel that my conduct, in war and in peace, with more general approbation than could reasonably have been expected; and I find myself disposed to consider the present fortunate circumstance, in a great degree, resulting from the able support and extraordinary candor of my fellow-citizens of all denominations.

"The prospect of national prosperity now before us is truly animating, and ought to excite the exertions of good men to establish and secure the happiness of the country, in the permanent duration of its freedom and independence. America, under the smiles of a Divine Providence, the protection of a good government, and the cultivation of manners, morals, and piety, cannot fail of attaining an uncommon degree of eminence, in literature, commerce, agriculture, improvements at home, and respect abroad.

"As mankind become more liberal, they will be more disposed to allow that all those who conduct themselves as members of the community, are equally entitled to the protection of civil government. I hope ever to see among the foremost nations in examples of justice and liberty. And I presume that your fellow-citizens will not forget the patriotic part which you took in the achievement of their revolution, and the establishment of a government; or, the important assistance which they have received from a nation in which the Catholic faith is predominant.

"I thank you, gentlemen, for your kind concern. While my life and my health shall continue, in whatever situation I may be, it shall be my constant endeavor to testify the favorable sentiments which you are pleased to express of my conduct. And may the members of our society in America, animated alone by the pure spirit of Christianity, and still conducting themselves as the subjects of our free government, enjoy every temporal and spiritual felicity.

"G. WASHINGTON

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]



## CHAPTER XVII.

### THE SEE OF BALTIMORE ESTABLISHED.—ALIEN AND SEDITION LAWS.—IRISH PATRIOT EXILES.

AFTER the termination of the war of Independence, it was deemed advisable by the Holy See, as well as by the Catholic clergy of the United States, that the Church here should no longer remain, as had been the case up to that time, subject to the jurisdiction of the vicar-Apostolic of the London district. The Papal Nuncio at Paris, Monsignor Doria, Archbishop of Seleucia, made Franklin, then Minister to France, aware of the change contemplated, and the latter having expressed a desire that Father John Carroll, who had accompanied him on the embassy to Canada, a few years before, and kindly nursed him when ill, should be placed at the head of the Church in America, his wishes were at once complied with, as the following extract from his diary will show.

"1784, July 1st.—The Pope's Nuncio called and acquainted me that the Pope had, on my recommendation, appointed Mr. John Carroll, Superior of the Catholic clergy in America with many of the powers of a bishop, and that probably he would be made a bishop *in partibus* before the end of the year. He asked which would be most convenient for him, to come to France or to go to St. Domingo for ordination by another bishop, which was necessary. I mentioned Quebec as more convenient than either. He asked whether, as that was an English province, our government might not take offence at his going thither. I thought not,

### THE IRISH LACK IN 1876

unless the ordination by that bishop should have the authority over our bishop. He said not if we were when our bishop was once ordained, he would be content of the other. \* \* \* He added that he had heard from America that there are twenty priests in Mississippi who are not sufficient, as the new settlements in Mississippi have need of some." \* Father Carroll commenced to administer the affairs of the Church for nearly a year as Superior or Prefect Apostolic, when, in compliance with a decree of Pope Pius VI., "the priests exercised jurisdiction in the United States" assembled to elect a bishop to determine in what city his See should be. The choice fell of course upon Father Carroll, and his election was ratified at Rome on November 6th, 1789. In consequence of the outbreak of the Revolution in America, the first American prelate did not deem it advisable to be consecrated, and Ireland was still suffering under the infamous Penal "Laws." Bishop Carroll then came to England, where at Lulworth Castle, the rector, Thomas Weld, his consecration took place on the 1st of the Assumption, 1790. This was nearly forty years before Catholic Emancipation was conceded. The new bishop had many difficulties to contend with, but he succeeded vigorously to overcome them. In many respects the condition of the American Catholics was much improved by the overthrow of British rule. Bishop England, up to this period, says: † "Many causes now combine to diminish the long-existing prejudices; not only had Catholicism fought and fallen in the Revolutionary struggle, but Catholic France had aided with her army and her navy, and Catholic chaplains had celebrated our offices in the

\* Sparks' Life and Writings of Franklin.

† Works of Rt. Rev. Dr. England, Vol. III. 238.



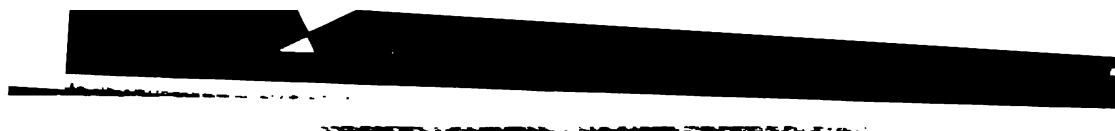
and in the cities. \* \* \* The best and most gallant and hardy portion of their own (American) troops, the Pennsylvania line was chiefly composed of Irish Catholics. The commander-in-chief, the noble and generous Washington, had testified to their bravery and devotion. A Catholic was the man who had probably staked his largest property in their cause, among that patriot band who had pledged life and fortune and sacred honor to sustain the Declaration of Independence. He had gone with Franklin and Chase, accompanied by a Catholic priest, (afterwards Archbishop Carroll), through pathless woods and unexplored mountains, a long and perilous journey, to try whether they could wipe away from the mind of the Catholic colony of Canada the unfavorable impressions which the ignorance, the folly and the bigotry of those hostile to his creed had made to the detriment of his country. The feelings of hostility to Catholics, and the prejudices against our religion, thus began at the period of the Revolution gradually to decline, liberty of worship was soon restored in some of the States, penalties were blotted from the statute-book, yet was the public mind quite uninformed respecting our tenets and principles; the ancient notions concerning Catholic doctrines and practises continued to subsist though feelings of kindness began to be entertained."

This illustrious prelate continues, "When the observer contemplates the situation of the Catholic church under those circumstances, he sees indeed a bishopric erected; the see is filled by a man worthy of his age, of his station and of his religion as well as of his country, but he is found to be comparatively powerless because equally destitute of a proper clergy and of the means for its creation. The scattered Catholics were destitute of pastors, their children were lost to the Church; the greater number of the few who exercised the ministry were unable to remove the erroneous

impressions of such a people as were found over the States. There were few opportunities; no books could be procured to defend Catholic doctrines; the principal portions of English literature, which necessarily became that of the United States, were filled with passages tending to destroy religion by sophistry, by ridicule and by wit; and throughout the whole country there was not found a press nor a book to counteract this evil. The people sought for information upon the subject, and every source from which they draw it was poisoned, every fountain at which they drank was tainted. Need we wonder at the continuance of the dislike, the dislike of our religion, the obloquy to which our principles and practises were exposed, or at the false impressions which drew the pusillanimous from the profession of our creed?"

In this connection may be interesting to read Dr. Land's opinion with regard to the loss sustained by religion through the causes above alluded to. "Fifty years ago," he said, writing in 1836, "the population of the United States was three millions; to-day it is fifteen millions. I shall suppose the natural increase of the original population to give us seven millions of our present number; this will give us eight millions of emigrants and their descendants together with those obtained by the acquisition of Louisiana and Florida.

"Of the population acquired by immigration and accretion, we may estimate at least one-half to have been Catholics, and supposing the children to have adhered to the religion of their parents, if there were no loss, we should have at least four millions of Catholics from these sources. But regarding the portion which was Catholic fifty years ago, and its natural increase, and the many conversions of their descendants. Yet there are many who this day are well informed upon the subject of our churches, who



if we have one million of Catholics. Upon my first arrival in the United States in 1820, I saw in a public document coming from a respectable source, the estimate to be one hundred thousand, and this from one by no means unfriendly. I have since then made closer inquiries, taken more special notice of details, and received better information, and I think the estimate may be safely fixed at 1,200,000. \* \* If, I say, upon the foregoing data, that we ought, if there were no loss, to have five millions of Catholics, and that we have less than one million and a quarter, there must have been a loss of three millions and three quarters at least."

In the great majority of cases, when men forgot or forgot their Faith in this country, they also lost sight or became ashamed of their origin. It has been often said that the Irish are a "missionary race," and that the sufferings and the persecutions which forced them to abandon their native soil were "providential," because through their instrumentality the cause of religion has been advanced in many lands. But does it not seem more reasonable to conclude that had Ireland been a free nation, her sons, emigrating to America or elsewhere, well taught and trained, and skilled, would be better fitted than they have been to command respect for their principles and their nationality; better able to serve the cause of religion, and to make their children preserve with pride and fidelity the traditions of their Motherland, and their attachment to her.

Within the limits of this little work, it will not be possible to give a detailed account of the progress of the Church up to our day, but the subject has been so ably and almost exhaustively treated by several eminent authors, that the task is rendered unnecessary.

The permanent seat of the Federal Government was fixed on the Potomac by an Act of Congress on July 16, 1790,

and the choice of a site being left to George Washington, he selected a farm owned by Daniel Carroll—Archbishop Carroll, and one of the authors of the Constitution of the United States—which was freely tendered for that purpose. Upon that land the Capitol was laid out. The original proprietor lived to see ten Presidents inhabit the "White House," where once his solitary cottage stood on the now world-famed river.

In the latter part of Washington's administration the people began to divide into two parties. They were the Republicans and the Federalists. The Republicans were French sympathies; the Federalists English. At the close of the former appeared Thomas Jefferson. John Adams led the Federalists. He was elected President upon Washington's positive refusal to remain in office for a second term, with Alexander Hamilton as Vice-President.

Adams' administration commenced in 1797. Before that time the Society of the United Irishmen existed in Ireland. In '97 a branch of the association was started in America. The headquarters were at Philadelphia, where that great and good Irishman, Matthew Carey, and Henry C. Carey, and himself a social scientist of considerable abilities, gave it aid and comfort. Before the formation of the branch association of the United Irishmen in the United States, the publications of the parent society were reprinted on this side of the water; and, as early as 1794, funds were collected, and arms were procured for the relations which then existed between Irish Revolutionaries and the Republic of France tended, of course, to strengthen the two nations; so that the Federalists became anti-French but anti-Irish also.

In 1798—the year of the Irish rebellion—President Adams, under pretence of danger from this society of

[REDACTED]

Irishmen, proposed in a message to Congress and obtained from that body the passage of the famous "Alien Law." Never was autocratic ruler clothed with more absolute power. By this law the President could order any alien he chose to deem "dangerous" to quit the country. Other foreigners were to be licensed to stay at the President's pleasure, and the neglect to take out such license was an offence punishable by three years' imprisonment and perpetual disqualification for citizenship. Fourteen years' residence was the time fixed as necessary to citizenship. This "Alien Law" was, as might be expected, severely criticised by the press; and forthwith Mr. Adams called upon Congress to pass another law—the "Sedition Law"—which made it a seditious libel to reflect on the conduct of the President or question the motives of Congress. The law was passed.\*

\* Matthew Lyon, an Irishman by birth, and a Member of Congress from the State of Vermont, became the special victim of this infamous law. Born in the County Wicklow, in 1746, he emigrated to New York in 1755; and, being too poor to pay for his passage, was assigned by the captain of the ship, for a pecuniary consideration, to a farmer in Connecticut, in whose service he remained a number of years. Subsequently he removed to Vermont. At the breaking out of the Revolution he joined the patriot army, and in July, 1776, was commissioned as lieutenant in one of the companies of "Green Mountain Boys." Afterwards he served as Commissary-General, and eventually rose to the rank of Colonel. After the war he became one of the most enterprising manufacturers of New England. He engaged in paper making, iron casting, and a variety of other occupations, and published a newspaper, thoroughly democratic in its ring, called, "*The Scourge of Aristocracy and Repository of Important Political Truth*," of which the types and paper were manufactured by himself. He married a daughter of Governor Chittenden, and, becoming an active political leader of the Jeffersonian school, was, in 1797, elected to Congress by the anti-Federal party. He was, of course, strong in his opposition to the policy of the then existing administration. In 1798 Lyon was convicted of a libel on President Adams, and sentenced to four months imprisonment and a fine of \$1,000. The libel consisted in the remark

The Irish Rebellion failed. At that time (1793) King, who had been appointed by President Adams to represent this Republic at the Court of St. James, was regarded with more malevolence towards the unsuccessful Irish than did even England herself. In the latter case the British Government agreed to liberate Thomas Addis Emmet, Dr. McNevin, and others of the leading United Irishmen, who had been confined in Scotland, on condition that they would leave the country and their minions never to return. Thomas Addis Emmet, however, refused the prisoners in the matter, and on their behalf requested passports to the United States, which the Minister, in accordance with the wishes and sympathies of President Adams, declined to grant! When Mr. Marsden, Under-Secretary, informed Mr. Emmet and his friends of the decision, that Mr. King had remonstrated against it, and had been permitted to emigrate to America, the English Minister remarked, "*Perhaps Mr. King does not desire to see the Irish in America.*" Had Mr. Emmet been granted his request at that time he would have been accompanied by his brother Robert, who would thus have been freed from the clutches of the English executioner.

Eight years afterwards, Thomas Addis Emmet arrived here in 1804, and was then one of the leading members of the New York Bar, denounced in a vigorous and able manner King's conduct in the case, and with so much success that the unworthy ex-minister, who was a candidate for the governorship of New York, was driven from public office. The course of his letter Emmet said:

that "the pomp of the White House better became the residence of the president of a republic!" In 1806, while a prisoner in jail, he was re-elected to Congress from Vermont. At the expiration of his term, he removed to Kentucky: at the first election that was held in that State, after his arrival, he was elected to represent Kentucky in Congress, and held his seat



-----



"Your interference was then, (in '98), Sir, made the pretext of detaining us for four years in custody, by which very extensive and useful plans of settlement within these States were broken up. The misfortunes which you brought upon the objects of your persecutions were incalculable. Almost all of us wasted four of the best years of our lives in prison. As to me, I should have brought along with me my father and his family, including a brother whose name [ROBERT EMMET] perhaps you even will not read without emotions of sympathy and respect. Others nearly connected with me would have come partners in my emigration. But all of them have been torn from me. I have been prevented from saving a brother, from receiving the dying blessings of a father, mother, and sister, and from soothing their last agonies by my cares; and this, Sir, by your unwarrantable and unfeeling interference."

Thomas Addis Emmet was about forty years old when he came to this country. Advised and encouraged by George Clinton, the Irish American governor of New York State, and by his nephew De Witt Clinton, then Mayor of New York City, the illustrious patriot devoted himself to the profession of the law, and being at once, notwithstanding some opposition, admitted to the bar, speedily acquired fame and aroused admiration among all who witnessed his efforts. Yet his path at first was not strewn with roses. Haines says: \*

\* The feeling entertained towards Emmet, among the most eminent of his contemporaries, is well illustrated by the manner in which Charles Glidden Haines speaks of him in a biographical sketch. "Helvetius remarks," he says, "that the sun of glory only shines upon the tomb of greatness. His observation is too often true, but facts and living proofs sometimes contradict it. Mr. Emmet walks on in life, amid the eulogiums, the admiration, and the enthusiastic regard of a great and enlightened community. Without the glare and influence of public office, without titles and dignities, who fills a wider space, who commands more respect, than Thomas Addis Emmet? Like a noble and simple column, he stands among us proudly preeminent,—destitute of

"Mr. Emmet's strong and decided attachment to democratic principles was known even before he reached American shores. Coming to a country where he could breathe and speak freely, he did not find it necessary to suppress those bold and ardent sentiments which had been in his bosom while toiling for the emancipation of his race. He mingled in the ranks of the Republican party, and in the atlantic politics, it is well known, had extended his influence to this country. The Federalists hated France, hated Ireland in her revolutionary days, and hated Charles James Fox and his Whig party in England. Mr. Emmet was viewed by the opponents of Jefferson's administration as a fugitive Jacobin. He was doomed to some little persecution even in this country. The great men of the New York bar were Federalists, and therefore turned their faces against Mr. Emmet. He formed a combination, and agreed to decline any political union and consultation with him. Mr. Emmet told me the names of this shameful league, but I will not now name his warmest friends and admirers, and as I esteem them, their names shall not go from me. When Mr. Emmet ascertained the existence of this combination, he did not hesitate what to do. His native boldness of decision of character governed his conduct. He determined to carry the war into the enemy's country. He

pretensions, destitute of vanity, and destitute of envy. In 1811 I recently received from a friend who resides in a western State, a lawyer of eminence, he speaks of the New York "Thomas Addis Emmet," says he, "is the great luminary who even crosses the western mountains. His name rings down the Mississippi, and we hail his efforts with a kind of enthusiasm." Haines' sketch in Madden's *United Irishmen*, Third Series, 146. Emmet never sought or held any public appointment, resigned the position of Attorney-General of New York.

for an attack. He proved the assailant. Whenever he met any of the league at the bar he assumed the attitude of professional war, and he lost nothing by contact. If Mr. Emmet has any one extraordinary power, it is the ready talent of successful and over-awing reply. His spirit is always dauntless. Fear he never knew. Hence he generally came off victorious in the wars against the combination.

"The league was soon dissolved. Business flowed in and Emmet assumed a standing, and was able to maintain it, that put all opposition at defiance."

Mr. Emmet was seized with an apoplectic fit while attending the session of the U. S. Circuit Court, on September 14, 1827, and died soon after, being carried to his home. The different courts were adjourned, and his funeral was attended by the members of the Bar, students at law, the city council, and large numbers of citizens of every walk in life. The splendid monument erected to his memory in St. Paul's churchyard, Broadway, New York, in December, 1832, is a proof of the estimation in which he was held by his countrymen. It is a marble monolith of nearly thirty feet in height, bearing inscriptions in three languages, Irish, English and Latin. The first written by Bishop England, the second by Hon. S. Verplanck, and the last by Judge Duer.\*

Among others who came with T. A. Emmet to America

\* T. A. Emmet was born at Cork City, April 24, 1764. He joined the Society of United Irishmen soon after its formation, and while acting as counsel in 1795, for persons charged with administering the oath of the organization, took it himself in open court. He was taken and put in prison March 12, 1798, and kept in Kilmainham and Fort George for more than three years, being released in July, 1802. He came to New York in 1804, and resided there almost constantly until his death in 1827. The translation of the inscription in Irish upon his monument, written by Bishop England, is as follows: "He contemplated invaluable

clat to his  
piration."

was William J. McNevin,\* once a physician of practice in Dublin, and an enthusiastic United Irishman. He was initiated into the organization by Miss M'wards Mrs. Macready, the friend of Lord Edgerald, and famous for her beauty as well as her one of the noble band of brave young Irish girls all the aid in their power to those who sought to land a Nation. McNevin was imprisoned first at Ham, and afterwards at Fort George, Scotland, with Emmet. When released, he joined the Irish Brigade as captain, hoping that Napoleon would soon invade Ireland, but being disappointed in this respect, he sailed for America, landing in New York, July 4, 1805. He soon acquired a distinguished reputation as a physician, wrote many able works, and continued till his death to take a deep interest in everything relating to his Motherland and her people. To his memory also a splendid monument was erected in St. Paul's churchyard, Broadway.

Alexander Porter, afterwards U. S. Senator from New York, and Judge of the Supreme Court of the State, was here a short time before the arrival of Emmet in America. He was a son of the Rev. James Porter, the minister of Grey Abbey near Belfast, who had been one of the leading United Irishmen, and who, having been captured in the field in 1798, was captured, "tried" by court-martial, and hanged before his own door. Young Porter

\* William James McNevin was born in 1763 at Ballinacorney, County. At the age of eleven he was sent to Vienna—Baron McNevin was physician to the Empress Maria Theresa. He was to be educated, the English Penal "Laws" prohibiting Catholics from receiving an education at home. He returned in 1783, obtained as a physician an extensive practice, became one of the leading members of the United Irish organization, was imprisoned in 1798, released in 1802, came to New York in 1805, where he resided for many years, and died in 1841, aged 78.

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

— for an attack. He proved the assailant. Whenever he met any of the league at the bar he assumed the attitude of professional war, and he lost nothing by contact. If Mr. Emmet has any one extraordinary power, it is the ready talent of successful and over-awing reply. His spirit is always dauntless. Fear he never knew. Hence he generally came off victorious in the wars against the combination.

"The league was soon dissolved. Business flowed in and Emmet assumed a standing, and was able to maintain it, that put all opposition at defiance."

Mr. Emmet was seized with an apoplectic fit while attending the session of the U. S. Circuit Court, on September 14, 1827, and died soon after, being carried to his home. The different courts were adjourned, and his funeral was attended by the members of the Bar, students at law, the city council, and large numbers of citizens of every walk in life. The splendid monument erected to his memory in St. Paul's churchyard, Broadway, New York, in December, 1832, is a proof of the estimation in which he was held by his countrymen. It is a marble monolith of nearly thirty feet in height, bearing inscriptions in three languages, Irish, English and Latin. The first written by Bishop England, the second by Hon. S. Verplanck, and the last by Judge Duer.\*

Among others who came with T. A. Emmet to America

\* T. A. Emmet was born at Cork City, April 24, 1764. He joined the Society of United Irishmen soon after its formation, and while acting as counsel in 1795, for persons charged with administering the oath of the organization, took it himself in open court. He was taken and put in prison March 12, 1798, and kept in Kilmainham and Fort George for more than three years, being released in July, 1802. He came to New York in 1804, and resided there almost constantly until his death in 1827. The translation of the inscription in Irish upon his monument, written by Bishop England, is as follows: "He contemplated invaluable benefits for the land of his birth, he gave eclat to the land of his death, and received in return her love and admiration."

### THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

was William J. McNevin,\* once a physician of practice in Dublin, and an enthusiastic United. He was initiated into the organization by Miss Edwards Mrs. Macready, the friend of Lord Edgewood, and famous for her beauty as well as her one of the noble band of brave young Irish girls all the aid in their power to those who sought to land a Nation. McNevin was imprisoned first at Ham, and afterwards at Fort George, Scotland, Emmet. When released, he joined the Irish Brigade, hoping that Napoleon would soon invade but being disappointed in this respect, he sailed for America, landing in New York, July 4, 1805. He soon acquired a distinguished reputation as a physician, wrote several able works, and continued till his death to take interest in everything relating to his Motherland people. To his memory also a splendid monument was erected in St. Paul's churchyard, Broadway.

Alexander Porter, afterwards U. S. Senator from New York, and Judge of the Supreme Court of the State, was here a short time before the arrival of Emmet in America. He was a son of the Rev. James Porter, the minister of Grey Abbey near Belfast, who had been one of the leading United Irishmen, and who, having been captured in 1798, was captured, "tried" by court-martial, and hanged before his own door. Young Porter was

\* William James McNevin was born in 1763 at Ballyvaughan, County. At the age of eleven he was sent to Vienna—where he remained until 1783. Baron McNevin was physician to the Empress Maria Theresa. He was to be educated, the English Penal "Laws" prohibiting the Catholics from receiving an education at home. He returned to Ireland in 1783, obtained as a physician an extensive practice, became a member of the United Irish organization, was imprisoned in 1798, released in 1802, came to New York in 1805, where he resided for several years, later and died in 1841, aged 78.

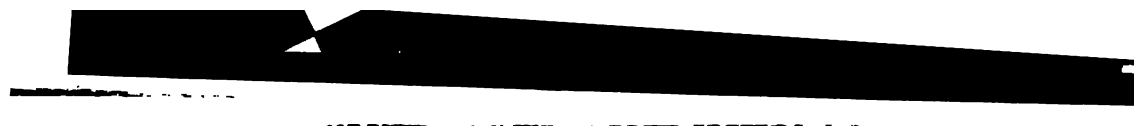


to the Bar at Nashville in 1807, and settled in Louisiana three years later. In 1821 he was raised to the bench of the Supreme Court, and was United States Senator from 1834 to 1837. To his exertions is due in a large measure the adoption of the system of jurisprudence which now obtains in Louisiana.

The brothers John and Benjamin Binns came to the United States in 1801. John had been tried at Maidstone, England, in 1798, along with Arthur O'Connor and Father Coigley, for "treason." The two first named escaped at that time, but the priest was condemned and executed. A little later Binns was again arrested and placed in Gloucester jail, where he was kept for nearly three years, being, however, allowed to come to this country in 1801. Soon after his arrival he commenced with his brother the publication of the *Republican Argus*, at Northumberland, Pa., and from 1807 to 1829, he conducted the *Democratic Press* of Philadelphia. He was for many years an alderman of the City of Brotherly Love, where he died in June, 1860.

William Sampson, another prominent United Irishman, was the son of a Presbyterian clergyman of Londonderry. Born in 1764, he received a commission in a corps of the Irish Volunteers, when only eighteen years old, and in 1793, became a member of the National organization. Having studied law, he acted frequently as counsel for his comrades and thus attracted the suspicion of the English government. His name was included in the list of those marked out for arrest on March 12, 1798, and though he escaped to England, he was seized there and sent back to Dublin. Being at length set free, he came to the United States in 1806, and was soon called to the Bar, where he attained great eminence. He wrote several very interesting works, and

Many patriots besides those named, including Neill who was adjutant-general to Beauchamp, Bager during the Wexford campaign, Traynor, who made a remarkable escape from the provost-guard in Dublin, Jackson, John Cormick and others, found a refuge in America from British power, and remained through the war as advocates of the cause of Irish Independence.





## CHAPTER XVIII.

## THE IRISH IN THE WAR OF 1812-15.

In the Presidential election of 1800, Jefferson defeated Adams, and immediately after his inauguration March 4th of the following year, ordered the release of the prisoners who had been condemned under the Sedition Act, which he held to be "unconstitutional, null and void." Jefferson then succeeded in having all the obnoxious measures passed under the administration of his predecessor repealed, including the act which had extended the period of residence required before naturalization to fourteen years. This was now reduced to five, in compliance with his suggestion.

On Jefferson's re-election in 1804, George Clinton of New York, son of Charles Clinton of Longford, was chosen Vice-President, receiving one hundred and sixty-two electoral votes, to fourteen cast for his opponent, Rufus King.

In order to cripple France, with which it was at war, the British government in 1806, issued its "orders in council" declaring the several European ports under the control of the French in a state of blockade, a measure which afforded a pretext for the seizure of American vessels bound to these ports. Napoleon thereupon issued his "Berlin decree," which forbade the introduction of English goods even in neutral vessels, into any port of Europe. He followed this up by his "Milan decree," which authorized the confiscation of such vessels as would submit to be searched by the English. The latter, however, insisted on their alleged "right of search" and refused to submit.

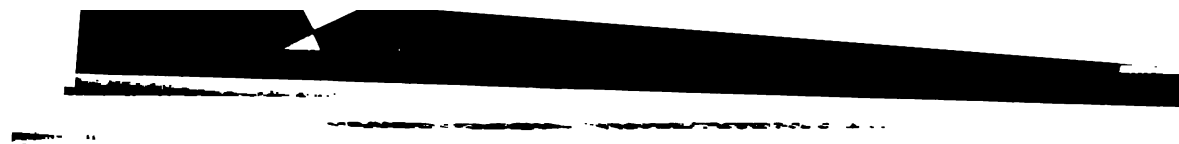
lish man-of-war, the *Leopard*, actually fired upon the States frigate *Chesapeake*, in June, 1807, killing and wounding eighteen of her crew, because her captain had refused to allow his vessel to be searched. The text that he had on board some seamen who were as British subjects.

The *Chesapeake* was not prepared for action and was forced to submit to the Englishman, who thereupon boarded her and took from her the men whose presence was made the cause of the outrage, and bore them off in triumph. The government indeed, on being remonstrated with, declared that its "right of search" did not extend to merchant vessels, but still continued to claim and enforce this "right" in the case of merchant vessels.

In December, 1807, Congress passed the "Embargo Act" by way of retaliation against England. By this act all United States trading vessels were prohibited from visiting the ports of the English, and though this operated to the disadvantage of the English, it also seriously injured our own shipping interests and caused much dissatisfaction in certain quarters.

In 1808, Madison was chosen as successor to George Clinton again defeating Rufus King as Vice-President. Soon after the accession of the new President, the British Minister at Washington demanded assurances that the English "orders in council" were annulled, and Madison thereupon issued a proclamation suspending the "Non-intercourse Act," which had been substituted for the embargo, when the latter was found to be injurious to American commerce. The British government, however, refused to carry out the promise made on Madison's half by its representative, and the latter was obliged to place being filled by a Mr. Jackson. This official position led him to think that he could dictate to Madison and to act as his predecessor Liston had done when





large majority the report, and passed an act in conformity with its decision, the Senate ratified the action of the House, and finally the President approved of the Declaration of War on June 18th.

An invasion of Canada was soon determined on. Among those who volunteered to take part in it, were a considerable number of Irish-born citizens, who fought in the battle of Queenstown Heights on October 13th under General, then Colonel, Scott. The contest ended with the surrender of the latter and his small body of troops to the greatly superior British force under General Sheaffe. The prisoners were sent to Quebec, and there a number of the Irish Americans were separated from their comrades and sent in irons to England, "in order to be tried and executed for the crime of high treason."

While the British officers were engaged in picking out the men, Scott, who was in the cabin of the transport, heard the bustle upon deck, and going up, found that twenty-three Irish soldiers had been already selected as victims, there being nearly three times as many still remaining among the other prisoners, the whole number of those captured amounting to two hundred and ninety men. As soon as Scott ascertained the purpose of the English officers, he shouted to his men to answer no more questions, but remain strictly silent, in order that no clue as to nationality should be given to the felon setters by the sound of an Irish accent. The men obeyed strictly in spite of threats freely made, and not another was added to the batch selected for slaughter. Scott was repeatedly ordered below, but he refused, and told those who were apparently doomed, that the United States would not fail to avenge their gallant and faithful soldiers, pledging himself moreover, in the most solemn manner, that retaliation and if necessary a refusal to give quarter in bat-

dent  
draw

ber,  
ders  
rin-  
de-  
h."   
tha.  
was  
nt a  
ned  
as a  
Jew  
the

re-  
res-  
on-  
l of  
een  
ide  
ea-  
nts  
w-  
be-

th-  
he  
it-  
ch  
in  
e-  
a



tle should follow the execution of even one of the party.\* When, some time after, Scott was landed in Boston and exchanged, he proceeded to Washington, informed the President of what he had witnessed, and was instructed to make a full report of the whole transaction in writing, which he did at once.† His report was immediately sent to both Houses of Congress, and led to the passage of the "Act

\* The names of the prisoners are given on page 632, vol. 3, of American State Papers. They are as follows, viz:—Henry Kelley, Henry Blaney, George M'Common, John Dalton, Michael Condon, John Clarke, Peter Burr, Andrew Doyle, John McGowan, James Gill, John Fulsom, Patrick McBraharty, Matthew Mooney, Patrick Karns, John Fitzgerald, John Wiley, John Donnelly, John Curry, Nathan Shaley, Edward M'Garrigan, John Dinnue, John Williams, George Johnson.

† Following is Scott's letter to the Secretary of War, written January 13, 1813.

SIR: I think it my duty to lay before the Department, that on the arrival at Quebec of the American prisoners of war surrendered at Queenstown, they were mustered and examined by British officers appointed to that duty, and every native-born of the United Kingdoms of Britain and Ireland sequestered, and sent on board a ship of war then in the harbor. The vessel in a few days thereafter sailed for England, with these persons on board. Over twenty persons were thus taken from us, natives of Ireland, several of whom were known by their platoon officers to be naturalized citizens of the United States, and others to have been long residents within the same. One in particular, whose name has escaped me, besides having complied with all the conditions of our naturalization laws, has left a wife and five children, all of them born within the state of New York.

I distinctly understood, as well from the officers who came on board the prison-ship for the above purpose, as from others with whom I remonstrated on this subject, that it was the determination of the British government, to punish every man whom it might subject to its power, found in arms against the British king contrary to his native allegiance.

I have the honor to be, sir, etc.,

WINFIELD SCOTT.

vesting the President of the United States with retaliation," on March 3, 1813.

"Two months later, at the battle and capture of Fort Mifflin, George, Scott made a great number of prisoners. In his pledge, he immediately selected twenty-three to be confined in the interior of the United States, there to abide the fate of the twenty-three imprisoned and sent to England by the British officers. In his selection, he was careful not to include a single Irishman, in order that Irishmen might not be sacrificed. This step led, on both sides, to the confinement of many other men and officers, all of whom were dependent for their lives on the fate of the other three."\*

When Lord Bathurst, the British Secretary, had been done with regard to those English prisoners, he sent a furious letter to Sir George Prevost in Canada, him to "put in close confinement *forty-six* American and non-commissioned officers to be held as hostages, and the *twenty-three* British soldiers stated to have been in close confinement by order of the American commander. Prevost was further instructed to notify Dearborn, the American commander on the Niagara frontier, of what had been done to his officers, and that he continued, "You will at the same time apprise the British that any of the said British soldiers shall suffer death, that the (American) soldiers now under confinement have been found guilty, and that the known fact that Britain has been in consequence executed, and that I am instructed to select out of the American officers and commissioned officers whom you shall have in confinement as many as may double the number of the British."

\* Mansfield's "Life of Scott."



\_\_\_\_\_

soldiers who shall so unwarrantably have been put to death, and *cause such officers and non-commissioned officers to suffer death immediately.*

"And you are further instructed to notify to Major-General Dearborn, that the commanders of His Majesty's fleets and armies on the coasts of America, have received instructions to prosecute the war with unmitigated severity against all cities, towns, and villages belonging to the United States, and against the inhabitants thereof, if, after this communication shall have been duly made to Major-General Dearborn, and a reasonable time given for its being transmitted to the American government, that government shall unhappily not be deterred from putting to death any of the soldiers who now are, or who may hereafter, be kept as hostages, for the purposes stated in the letter.

BATHURST."

Notwithstanding these threats, however, the British government did not dare to execute the Irish-American prisoners; though it did indeed "prosecute the war with unmitigated severity against all cities, towns, and villages belonging to the United States," as far as it was able. Madison at once directed that forty-six British officers should be set apart as hostages for the safety of the forty-six American officers and non-commissioned officers, designated by the English official.

"The new hostages were partly selected from Scott's captures, and partly from the prisoners taken by General Harrison at the battle of the Thames. Some other imprisonments were made on both sides, in the following winter. In the campaign of 1814, however, the American arms were crowned with such brilliant success, that Britain had little of either power or inclination to pursue the war of retaliation on American prisoners. In fact, it ceased. The prisoners

were not executed, and one day in July, 1815, had been some months concluded, and Scott (the General) was passing along on the East River city of New York, he was attracted by loud cheering on one of the piers. He approached the scene, and was his delight to find that it was the cheers of friends, in whose behalf he had interfered at who had, that moment, landed in triumph, after a confinement of more than two years in English prison. One were present, two having died natural death.

Among the officers who distinguished themselves on the Canadian frontier at the battles of Chippewa and Fort Erie, were General Brady, Mullany, and McRee, Captain James McKeon (late Hon. John McKeon of New York), who was publicly upon his bravery by the Tammany tenant Roach, adjutant of Scott's regiment, mayor of Philadelphia, with many other Irish. At the battle of the Thames, fought 1813 by under Harrison against the British and Indians, according to the popular account, Tecumseh, the famous chief, received his death wound from Mason, an old Irishman, and a native of Wexford, then nearly old.†

In May, 1813, a marauding British force numbering hundreds attacked and burned Havre de Grace, which was abandoned on the advance of the few militia in the vicinity, but defended by O'Neil and two others with great gallantry when O'Neil was taken prisoner, and brought to the *Maidstone* frigate, where he would have been executed but for the strenuous efforts of General

\* Mansfield's "Life of Scott."

† McGie's "Early Irish Settlers."



threatened to put two British prisoners to death if the lives of the brave Irish-American were taken.

The gallant defense of Fort Stephenson, Sandusky County, Ohio, by Major George Croghan, a young Irish-American officer, in August, 1813, was one of the most creditable events of the war. General Harrison, having inspected the fort, became convinced that it could not be held against an enemy provided with artillery, and sent word to the commandant to destroy the public stores there, and retreat when the British advanced in considerable force. But Croghan determined to defend it to the last, and although he had only one hundred and sixty men and one six pounder, he repulsed the British general Proctor, who had under him four hundred English regulars and a large body of Indians, with several pieces of artillery.

Intelligence of this gallant defense caused the liveliest sentiments of admiration throughout the country, and congratulations were sent to Major Croghan from every quarter. His general, in his official report, spoke of him in words of highest praise. The ladies of Chillicothe, Ohio, purchased and presented to him an elegant sword. Congress voted him the thanks of the nation, and afterward gave him a gold medal in commemoration of his signal service on that day.\*

\* George Croghan was a son of Major William Croghan of the Revolutionary Army. His father was a native of Ireland; his mother was a sister of General George Rogers Clarke, the Father of the Northwest. He was born at Locust Grove, near the Falls of the Ohio, (now Louisville), in Kentucky, on November 15, 1791. He joined the army under Harrison at Vincennes, and was volunteer aid to Col. Boyd at the battle of Tippecanoe. In March, 1813, he was promoted to major, and became aid-de-camp to Gen. Harrison. In that capacity he distinguished himself in the defense of Fort Meigs, and the sortie on the 5th of May under the gallant Col. Miller. For his gallantry at Fort Stephenson he was breveted a lieutenant-colonel, and was appointed colonel of a rifle corps in February, 1814. At the close of the war he was retained in

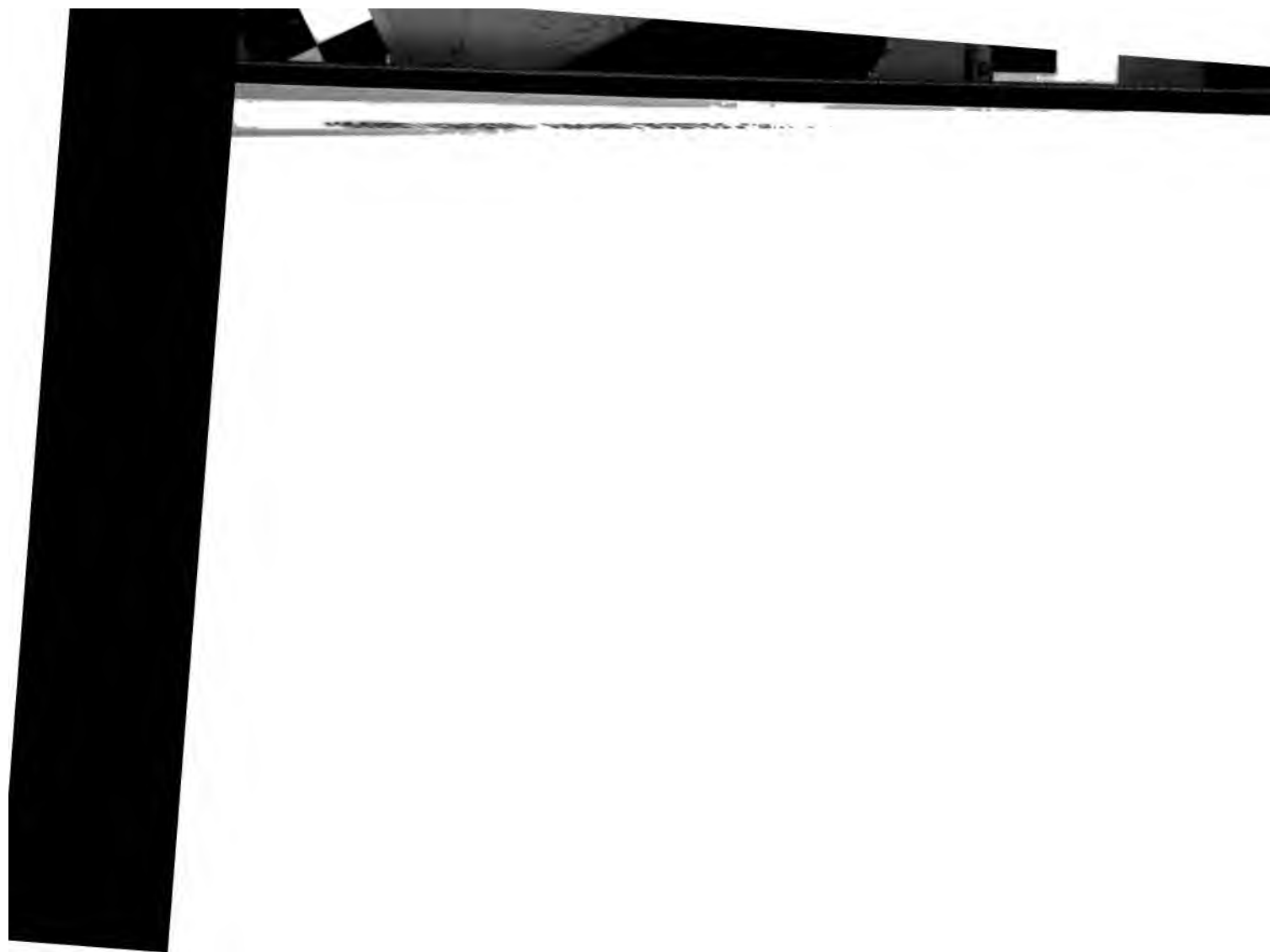
A monument was erected on the spot by the people of Sandusky County in July, 1885, to perpetuate the memory of the defenders of Fort Stephenson as well as that of those who fell in maintaining the Union.

Though frequently beaten at sea, the British, having a large naval force, were able to inflict serious injury upon the American towns along the coast. An Order in Council, issued early in the war, declared the ports and harbors in the Chesapeake and Delaware Bays to be in a state of blockade, and Admiral Cockburn, who had command in that quarter, signalized himself by committing the most horrible atrocities upon the people within his reach. A repulse at Craney Island, by the forces under Major Faulkner, an Irish officer, only embittered the redcoats and they took a brutal revenge at Hampton soon after.

The government at Washington felt confident that the British would not venture to that point, and failed to take adequate precautions for its defence. About the middle of August, 1814, the British squadron in the Chesapeake was re-inforced by a fleet of 21 vessels, under the command of Admiral Cochrane, and later by a number of frigates, under Commodore Malcolm. These ships carried land forces amounting to several thousand men. Washington and Baltimore were the chosen points of attack, and a portion of the fleet was sent up the Potomac at once. With about 2,500 men, many of whom had only been under arms three or four days, General Winder, the American commander, encountered the English at Bladensburg, but, as might be expected, the raw troops which formed the greater

service, but married in 1817, and resigned. In 1824 he was appointed postmaster at New Orleans, and returned to the service in 1825 as inspector-general with the rank of colonel. In 1835 Congress awarded him a gold medal for his gallantry at Fort Stephenson. He died at New Orleans on January 8, 1849.

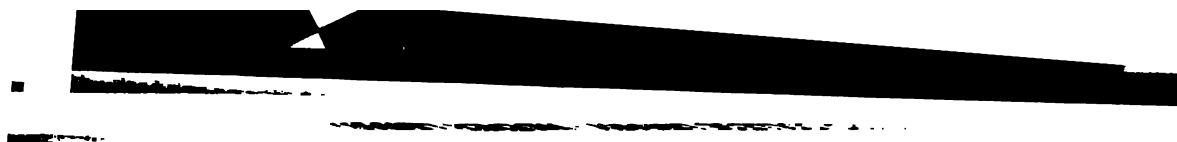




Abbey in honor of Ross, who was killed soon after at Baltimore.

The next day the British re-embarked and returned down the river. - They compelled the people of Alexandria to give up to them all the merchandise and shipping which they possessed. They then sailed down the Potomac, and reached Baltimore on September 11th. Here, though the Americans were forced to retire before superior numbers, the redcoats failed in their attempt on Fort McHenry, and on the evening of the 13th retired baffled and disappointed to their ships.

But there was still a worse defeat in store for them. Andrew Jackson had been appointed Major-General in the United States army on May 31, 1814. After the repulse of a British attack on Fort Bowyer at Mobile Point, he marched upon Pensacola, which the British had made their base of operations in the South, and seized it on November 6th. He then sent the main body of his troops to New Orleans, and arrived there himself on December 2, 1814. On the 14th of that month the British captured five American gunboats and a schooner, which gave them command of the route to New Orleans. Jackson had previously called out the State militia. He had to oppose the enemy with a small force of regulars and militia from Louisiana, Mississippi, Tennessee and Kentucky, the privateersmen of Barataria and a colored battalion. General Keane landed with the British advance on December 16th and marched to within nine miles of the city on the 23d. Jackson then assembled his most available troops, amounting to a little over two thousand, and attacked the enemy. He was successful, but was prevented from following up his success by the arrival of large British reinforcements, and fell back to a canal four miles from the city, where he entrenched his forces. Sir Edward Pakenham arrived on the 25th, and the same even-



t Carolina.  
d again on  
occasions.  
it fourteen  
regiments  
shed to at-  
ver on Jan-  
son's works  
General's  
nd it were  
while eight  
se at hand.  
ales of cot-  
illery scat-  
quence of  
fallen into  
gar which  
in cannon-  
confidence

ie men of  
glish col-  
mand of  
e in the

y opened  
to rear."  
ld in his  
ds of his  
ing, and  
ks. Still  
ey came  
halted,  
alf their

number. An attempt to rally the flying forces and retrieve the fortunes of the day by pushing forward the Highlanders, who advanced later, only led to a similar result. They, too, broke and sought refuge behind trees and in ditches. Hardly twenty-five minutes elapsed between the first fire of the Americans and the complete rout of the British, who lost in the attack over two thousand men, including Pakenham, the chief in command. Jackson had seven killed and six wounded. Well, indeed, had he avenged the death of his brothers and repaid English tyranny for having driven his parents from their native soil, and America for having sheltered them in their hour of need.

On the western bank of the river matters had not proceeded so favorably. There the Americans abandoned their position and fell back before the British. Jackson promptly sent a strong force across the river, under the command of General Humbert—who had in '98 chased the English before him at Castlebar—with orders to retake the position which the enemy had gained. Before Humbert could make his arrangements, however, General Lambert, the English commander, sent a flag of truce to Jackson, asking for leave to bury his dead, and subsequently withdrew his troops from the western bank altogether.

It has been doubted whether the British used as a watchword on that day the expression "Beauty and Booty," but there can be no question whatever that, had they taken the city, the women would not have been safe from outrage nor their homes from pillage. Even wounded British officers, who, as prisoners, were treated with every kindness, acknowledged that they would be unable to protect even their benefactresses from the worst fate which woman can suffer. A considerable number of the defenders of New Orleans were of the same origin as the hero of the fight. One of these, Nicholas Sinnot, a '98 "rebel," who had fought at Oulart



and Vinegar Hill, was sent in command of a detachment to which was entrusted the charge of Fort St. John. When the sound of battle reached their ears there was great difficulty in preventing Sinnott from leading his men to the scene of action. "There," said he, "are the bloody villains murdering my countrymen, and myself stuck down in this infernal mud-hole."

The British finally retreated on the 18th and took refuge on board their ships.

General Jackson, upon their departure, requested the Right Rev. Dr. Dubourg, Catholic Bishop of New Orleans, to offer up to Heaven thanks for the victory. "Permit me," he wrote, "to entreat that you will cause the service of public thanksgiving to be performed in the Cathedral in token of the great assistance we have received from the Ruler of all events and of our humble sense of it."

The Bishop, in compliance with the General's request, appointed the 23d for the celebration. On that day Jackson, surrounded by his staff, marched to the Cathedral through streets lined with troops, and past windows and balconies filled with spectators. Passing under a triumphal arch, he received crowns of laurel from two young girls, another congratulating him on behalf of Louisiana, while there were ranged on each side ladies dressed in white, representing the several States of the Union. At the entrance to the sacred edifice he was met by Bishop Dubourg, who welcomed him most cordially and eloquently. The General, in the course of his reply, said, "I thank you, Reverend Sir, most sincerely for the prayers which you offer up for my happiness. May those your patriotism dictates for our beloved country be first heard, and may mine for your individual prosperity, as well as that of the congregation committed to your care, be favorably received."

He was then conducted by the Bishop to a seat prepar-

for him near the high altar, and the *Te Deum* was sung with impressive solemnity.

It should be remembered that a treaty of peace had been agreed on between the United States and Britain fifteen days before the battle of New Orleans, but the news did not reach New York until February 11, 1815.

In the conflicts by sea which took place during this war, many Irish-Americans took a leading and creditable part.

Captain Boyle in the *Comet*, a privateer schooner, attacked and captured three British vessels, one of fourteen, and two of ten guns each, convoyed by a Portuguese brig of thirty-two guns, near the harbor of Pernambuco in January, 1813. He captured later the *Adelphi* of Aberdeen, carrying eight guns, the *Alexis* of Greenock, of ten guns, the armed vessel *Dominica* of Liverpool, and several others, and entered the harbor of Baltimore in triumph on St. Patrick's Day, 1814, having passed through the midst of the British blockading squadron in safety.

On another cruise during the same year in the *Chasseur*, which carried sixteen long twelve pounders, Captain Boyle captured eighteen British vessels including the *St. Lawrence*, a ship, of fifteen guns, which was conveying reinforcements to New Orleans. He cruised around the British Channel during several months of the year 1814, inflicting great damage upon the British shipping, and having many remarkable adventures. As a burlesque on the "paper blockade" which the British sought to establish around the American coast, Boyle, while in the English Channel, issued a "proclamation" declaring "all the ports of Britain to be in a state of strict and rigorous blockade," which he sent to London with a request to have it posted up at Lloyd's Coffee House.

Captain Stafford, another Irish-American officer, in the *Dolphin*, fought and captured two British vessels in January

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

Cape St. Vincent, bringing them to Baltimore the British blockading squadron. Captain Murphy, *campus*, after a successful career of many months, ngth decoyed by a British war-vessel disguised as ntman, of greatly superior force, but succeeded in is escape after a desperate conflict, in which he a fatal wound.

Blakely, a native of Seaford, county Down, was war broke out a Lieutenant on the *Enterprise*, but placed in command of the *Wasp*, and sent to and the English coast. On June 14th he fought ed the British man-of-war *Reindeer*, and a little *lvon* of eighteen guns, and the *Atlanta* of eight. time nothing authentic was heard of him, and his eved to have been lost in a storm. The Legis- orth Carolina generously undertook to support nd only child.

John Shaw, a native of Mountmellick, Queens o in the *Enterprise* achieved some remarkable ring the trouble with France at the close of the , was at the time of Burr's conspiracy placed in f the flotilla fitted out for the defence of the and in 1813 commanded the naval force which ith General Wilkinson in the capture of Mobile. ras placed in command of the Mediterranean d on his return was put at the head of the Bos- rd. Fenimore Cooper says of Shaw, that nd to none on the list of gallant seamen with y of the United States commenced its brilliant

: Charles Stewart, born of Irish parents at in 1778, became a Lieutenant in the United the age of twenty, and served under Com- on his first cruise along with Decatur, whose

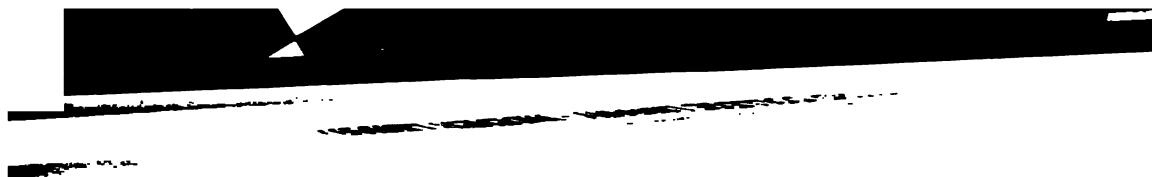
## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

285

mother, it may be remarked, was Irish. In 1813, Stewart was put in command of the *Constitution*, and in that year he captured the British war-vessel *Picton* with the *Catherine* and *Phoenix*, and fought the frigates *Junon* and *La Nymphe* together. In the following year he captured the *Lord Nelson* and the *Susan*, and in February, 1815, fought the *Cyane* of thirty-four guns, and the *Levant* of twenty-one, together, the conflict continuing into the night, and ending in the surrender of both English ships. For this glorious triumph, the common council of New York tendered him the freedom of the city. The Legislature of Philadelphia presented him with a gold-hilted sword, and Congress voted him a gold medal. Commodore Stewart was the father of Mrs. D. T. Stewart Parnell, mother of Charles Stewart Parnell.

Commodore Thomas McDonough was born in Newcastle, Delaware, in 1783, and distinguished himself under Decatur in the war with Tripoli in 1805. In the following year, while first lieutenant of the *Siren*, he rescued in the harbor of Gibraltar from a boat belonging to a British frigate, an American seamen who had just been taken from on board a United States merchant brig. In 1812 he was sent to take command in Lake Champlain, and busied himself in superintending the construction of a small fleet. On September 11, 1814, Prevost the English commander at the head of twelve thousand men prepared to attack the Americans under General Macombe, who numbered scarcely fifteen hundred, at Plattsburgh. The British squadron at the same time attacked the American fleet, but the conflict resulted in a glorious victory for McDonough and the flag he fought under. He sunk or captured all the British vessels, and sent a dispatch to the Secretary of the Navy saying, "The Almighty has been pleased to grant us a signal victory on Lake Champlain." His efforts frustrated the





CHAPTER XIX.

AMERICAN SYMPATHY WITH IRELAND—JACKSON—FOLK—  
THE MEXICAN WAR.

ALTHOUGH the war was ended by the treaty of Ghent, the feeling of hostility between the two nations still existed. The English had not abandoned their pretensions, and the Americans were more disposed than ever to resent them. The British press indulged in the coarsest abuse of the institutions and public men of this Republic, while the people here evinced in the most unmistakable manner their sympathy with the struggles of the Irish against British misrule. Their sentiments in this regard were of course strengthened by the large and constantly increasing emigration from Ireland to this country. This soon assumed extraordinary proportions, while that from England, owing to the fact that the people there were less oppressed by harsh laws, and that moreover, and especially since the Revolution, they had always felt jealous of and prejudiced against the Americans, remained as it had been inconsiderable. The efforts of the Irish to be allowed to educate themselves, and to abolish religious inequalities, naturally called for and received the approbation and support of the free people of this Republic. Associations were formed in many cities of "The Friends of Ireland," and the utterances heard at their meetings gave confidence to the Irish people, and created apprehension among their enemies.

Mr. Wyse, in his *History of the Catholic Association*, says, referring to what was transpiring at that period:

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

"The American papers were filled with the subject. Ireland often formed their leading article. The debates of their associations were given with the same punctuality, and read with an earnestness scarcely inferior to that which generally attended the proceedings of the Catholic Association of Ireland. The entire people became kindled by the subject, and every day the conclusions to which it tended were more and more perceptible. The last document from that country (it arrived in Ireland but a short time after the dissolution of the association) states, that in every hamlet in the land similar bodies were ere long to be established, and that delegates of the Friends of Ireland (it was thus the Philhellènes preluded to the liberation of Greece) were to assemble in general congress from all parts of the Union at Washington, there to consider and devise the best means of assisting the efforts making in this country for emancipation. The exertions of individuals were favored by the government: the local authorities often presided; and it has been stated on the best information, that the President himself, General Jackson, had expressed his intention of subscribing the first thousand dollars to the patriotic fund.

"Little doubt can exist, that if this sort of collateral or accompanying organization in America had been suffered to proceed, and thus to spread itself over every part of the States, the most alarming, and perhaps the most fatal, consequences might have ultimately resulted to this country. The suppression of the association in Ireland, (even if practicable), in such a state of things, would literally have effected nothing. No English statute could have travelled to the other side of the Atlantic; the exasperation produced by so arbitrary an act, on the temper of the Irish Catholics, would in an instant have communicated itself to their brethren in America. Indignation, legitimate indignation, would have added new fuel to their zeal: the associations would

### THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

of course have increased; their funds would have mented; and a spirit very different from the spirit now exists would very probably have directed their application. \* \* \* Nor would this have been the of the evil. It must be remembered that America is different power from what she was at the period of rebellion. Her connection and sympathy with Ireland infinitely closer. The survivors of that eventful people occupy some of the highest stations in her government, cannot be supposed to have lost much of their sympathies. They have long watched with anxiety every of retaliation. They have the will, and would have been long under such circumstances without the effect it. They would have found in Ireland a most coöperation. The delay of emancipation on the one and the habit of discussion on every topic connected with the government (generated by the debates on the question) on the other, had produced views incompatible with the connection (with Britain) in the minds of a large portion of the population. Many began to adopt a tone quite in harmony with the first addresses from them. They began to consider even Catholic emancipation as a very partial remedy for the political and moral evil of Ireland. They looked to a regeneration far more and decisive: they believed that Ireland had outgrown her connection, and could now set up for herself. *on past experience, they were disposed to treat with contempt all overtures from England. They had proof that she had never made concessions to Ireland upon compulsion. They looked only to such a crisis by its appalling force, loose the iron grasp altogether create the country forever from its dependence. That at any thing less than self-government in its own separation and republicanism were the two chief*



\_\_\_\_\_

.

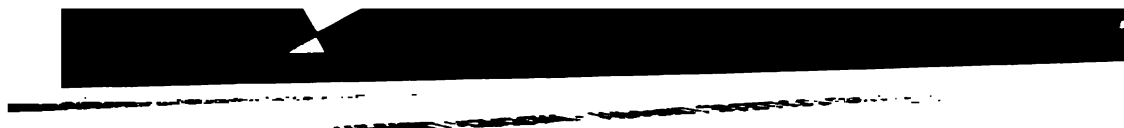
*their political creed.* Such a party has, within these last years, been rapidly increasing in Ireland—far more formidable than the French party which haunted the imagination of Mr. Grattan, and which he so often denounced in parliament. It based its projects *on the practical model which it saw in America*, expanding to a greater maturity and vigor every day before them. They compared the resources, the advantages, the population, the energies, the intelligence, of the two countries. They opposed the oppression and wretchedness of one to the freedom and prosperity of the other. *They calculated that there was no other emancipation for Ireland than the absolute assertion of her independence;* and that the attempt if conducted with ordinary prudence and perseverance, quietly husbanding and augmenting their forces, and awaiting with patience the propitious and certain hour for the experiment, could not fail of the most entire success."

In the Presidential election of 1824,\* General Jackson re-

\* Jackson's parents emigrated from Carrickfergus, Antrim County, Ireland, where they had followed the occupation of linen-weavers in 1765, and landing at Charleston went with a number of relatives and friends to settle down in "the Waxhaws." The father was named Andrew Jackson, the mother, before her marriage, Eliza Hutchinson, and they brought with them across the Atlantic two sons, Hugh and Robert. Within two years the father died and the widow and her orphans sought shelter under the friendly roof of a brother-in-law, George McKemey, where a few nights after, March, 15, 1767, she gave birth to a boy whom she named after his dead father, Andrew Jackson—a name which he was destined to make one of the proudest in American history. Jackson was 9 years old when the Declaration of Independence was signed. Hugh, Andrew's eldest brother, fought at the battle of Stono, and died of exhaustion shortly after. A little later Andrew and Robert were present at Sumpter's attack on the British at Hanging Rock, where, when the battle was nearly won, the Americans, like the Irish at New Ross in '98, through indulgence in the liquor they had captured from the British, suffered defeat. It is recorded that whenever Andrew

ceived 99 electoral votes, 84 being cast for Adams, 41 for W. H. Crawford, the Congressional nominee, and 37 for Henry Clay. No candidate received a majority, the election devolved on the Representatives, and Adams was chosen. Jackson was elected Vice-President for the same term.

was sent with farm tools to be mended to the blade, always brought home some new weapon to be used again. Sometimes, slashing at the weeds on the farm with a cry out: "Oh, if I were a man how I would sweep with my grass blade!" Jackson began in his 18th year and was admitted to practice before he reached the age of 21. He was appointed public prosecutor of the western part of North Carolina, which included the present State of Tennessee. He married in 1791 Mrs. Rachel Robinson, District-Attorney of Tennessee when it became a territory. When it was admitted as a State, in 1796, he was elected to Congress. He was chosen U. S. Senator in 1797. In November 22, of that year, but returning to Tennessee in 1799, he resigned. He was then elected a Justice of the Supreme Court of Tennessee. When war was declared against England he offered his services and those of the militia division of Tennessee. He was appointed Major-General to the Government, but was not then called on. In 1814, he was appointed Major-General in the United States Army. He captured Pensacola, Florida, from the British in 1814, and reached New Orleans on December 2. On January 8, 1815, he won the battle of New Orleans. The Seminole war was suppressed by Jackson in 1817-18. He was appointed Governor of Florida when Spain ceded that State to the Republic. The Tennessee Legislature elected him U. S. Senator. He received 73 electoral votes in the Presidential election of 1824. John Quincy Adams, 41 for W. H. Crawford, and 37 for Henry Clay. No candidate having received a majority, the election devolved on the House of Representatives, and Adams was chosen. Jackson was however again elected President in 1829, receiving 219 votes out of a total of 225. His death occurred in 1845. \* John Caldwell Calhoun was born in Calhoun Se-



AMERICA.

ink forever, and when  
pularity was found to  
ampaign of 1828, when  
ams, was exceedingly  
Mrs. Jackson, during  
and in tears. Asking  
graph reflecting on his  
an defend; you I can  
even the memory of  
rcely attacked in the  
be the organ of the  
n, on his arrival in  
call upon Mr. Adams.  
New Orleans received  
or Adams, and Cal-  
lency. In the midst  
to attend a banquet  
son suffered the loss  
ent which cast a deep

ny in 1832, receiving  
Nullification crisis oc-  
nd his inauguration.

lfather, James Calhoun,  
ia in 1763, bringing his  
ather of the distinguished  
d Martha Caldwell, the  
ird son of this couple,  
f the State Legislature,  
t in that body for the  
ss having been called  
h before the usual time.  
et of President Monroe  
d States in 1825, and  
on in 1850.

THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

293

The extreme Nullifiers asserted the right of any State of the Union to secede whenever it pleased. The difficulty was, however, averted for the time by a compromise measure introduced by Clay, which enabled the South Carolinians to abandon their resistance to the Government without having to yield to force.

In June, 1833, the President visited several cities in the North. At Boston, the Charitable Irish Society in a body, headed by its banner, paid its respects to him at the Tremont House. After all the members of the society had been introduced, President Boyd on behalf of his brother-members, addressing the chief magistrate said, after mentioning that the body was composed exclusively of Irish and their descendants, "We fill the place now that was once occupied by men who have done the State some service in times of peril and danger, men who did not withdraw themselves from the ranks of those who were fighting the battles of liberty, nor could withhold the most zealous support to the Constitution and Laws and Magistrates of this our adopted country. We hope, Sir, the present generation has not fallen off from the standing maintained by their fathers, and that if occasion required the motto on our Banner\* would be a promise which would be willingly performed at any time." And then he expressed the pride which himself and his brothers felt at seeing the highest office in the Republic held by the son of an Irishman, and concluded by wishing that the remainder of the illustrious visitor's life "might be as long and happy as its past had been brilliant and successful."

The President, evidently very deeply affected by the Irish welcome tendered him, replied:

\* The banner of the Charitable Irish Society of Boston has upon it an eagle, with the motto underneath, "*Fostered under thy wings, we will die in thy defense.*"





1111 1111

gratified, Sir, at this testimony of respect  
: Charitable Irish Society of this City. It  
asure that I see so many of the Countrymen  
sembled on this occasion. *I have always*  
*ancestry* and of being descended from that  
rejoice that I am so nearly allied to a coun-  
much to recommend it to the good wishes  
ld to God, Sir, that Irishmen on the other  
t water, enjoyed the comforts, happiness,  
*liberty*, that they enjoy here. I am well  
rishmen have never been backward in giv-  
to the cause of liberty. They have fought,  
try valiantly, and I have no doubt would  
t necessary, but I hope it will be long be-  
ns of our Country need support of that  
est wishes for the happiness of you all.”  
led his reply, the members of the Society  
draw, when the President again took Mr.  
, and in the most affectionate manner held

at fatigued, Sir, as you may notice, but I  
to part with me till I again shake hands  
do for yourself and the whole Society. I  
ere are few circumstances that have given  
satisfaction than this visit. I shall re-  
asure, and I hope you, Sir, and all your  
joy health and happiness." \*

of Tennessee, a descendant of Robert  
il, Ireland, † having received one hundred

ds of Charitable Irish Society.  
and Magdalen Pollock, together with their six  
, set sail from the County Donegal, Ireland, for  
he then colony of Lord Baltimore and now Somer-  
ut a place now known as Dane's Quarter. All the

and seventy electoral votes, to one hundred and seven cast for Henry Clay, took the oath of office as President of the United States on March 4, 1845. Soon after his inauguration war with Mexico, which had been anticipated for some time broke out.

When the Independence of Mexico was established in 1821, Texas was a Mexican province, and remained so, until 1836, when the people of the Lone Star State formed for themselves a separate and independent government. They then desired to obtain admission into the Union, and on March 3, 1845, Congress ratified the treaty of annexation made by John C. Calhoun at Washington, on behalf of the United States with the Texan commissioners.

Mexico had not recognized the separate sovereignty of Texas, and the Mexican Minister withdrew from the National Capital as soon as the fact of the annexation became known. Nearly a year, however, was spent in negotiations before war actually broke out. In March, 1846, General Taylor, then at Corpus Christi, advanced to the banks of the Rio Grande, and erected Fort Brown opposite Matamoras. Soon after he fought the battles of Palo Alto and Resaca de la Palma. A little later Matamoras surrendered and Monterey was also compelled to submit. Among the officers who most distinguished themselves in those engagements, was the Irish

sons married and became the progenitors of numerous families. From one of the sons were descended the late *President James K. Polk*, General Thomas Polk, of Mecklenburg fame, Bishop and Lieutenant-General Leonidas Polk, and others. From another son, Governor Charles Polk, of Delaware, deceased; and from another, Governor Trusten Polk, of Missouri.—*Potter's American Monthly*, May, 1876.

Lossing says, (*Eminent Americans*, p. 388,) that President Polk was born in Mecklenburg County, N. C.—chiefly settled by the Irish and their descendants—which was known as the "Hornet's Nest," because of the zeal and activity of its people in the cause of liberty during the Revolution.



grandson  
aylor was  
mand-in-  
es home  
n Down-  
h many  
res with  
f Buena  
twenty  
ith five  
y, who  
l a rifle  
regular  
nessed  
is con-  
a com-  
ng the  
being  
top to  
same  
ricans  
found  
aving  
killed  
our

Vera  
rest  
emy  
mor-  
er at  
and  
onel  
rke



of the 1st artillery killed. The day following this last conflict, the Mexicans sent out a flag of truce from the Capital, and an armistice was arranged. This battle was fought on August 20, 1847.

Again the struggle was renewed when terms of peace could not be agreed on, and on the 8th of September Chapultepec was won by our troops, Shields, who was badly wounded, refusing to retire while the contest raged. Finally on September 14th, the Stars and Stripes floated over the Mexican capital, and the war was practically ended. Major General Robert Patterson was one of the Irish officers who greatly distinguished himself in this campaign, and he was no less esteemed for his bravery than beloved by the men who fought under him. General Patterson was born near Strabane, Tyrone county, Ireland, in 1792. His father, who had been a "rebel" in '98, left Ireland on the failure of that struggle, bringing his little boy with him, and settled in Delaware county, Pa. General James Shields\* was present at

---

\* General James Shields was born in 1810, on the Hill of Altimore, about four miles from Dungannon, Tyrone county, Ireland. At the age of sixteen he came to America, and after some years established himself in Kaskaskia, Ills. engaging in the practice of the law. While employed in this manner he was involved in a difficulty with Abraham Lincoln, which fortunately ended without serious results, and both became warm friends in later years. In 1839 Shields was elected State Auditor of Illinois, and was chosen Judge of the Supreme Court of the State in 1843, a position which he held until 1845, when President Polk appointed him Commissioner of the United States Land Office. In the year following the Mexican war broke out, and Shields was offered by the President the Commission of Brigadier General, and he at once set out for Mexico. He greatly distinguished himself at the siege of Vera Cruz, was shot through the lungs at Cerro Gordo, and believed to be mortally wounded, yet in a few weeks he was again in the saddle. At Contreras and Cherubusco he rendered most essential service, and at Chapultepec he was again wounded while leading on his men. For his valor in these actions he received the brevet of Major General. In 1849 he was elected U. S. Sen-

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

ICA.

through the lungs  
he way to the city  
brigades in the  
Ireland, of Irish  
both days of the  
orks at the bay.  
" says Colonel  
nd and foe, un-  
his colors on the  
ed the army to  
bravery at the  
South Carolina  
ment, until he  
isco. Shields,  
Colonel Butler  
ers of the com-  
the conflict of  
victory again  
aving lost his  
nued to press  
ast fatal ball

settle on lands  
d U. S. Senator  
58. When the  
d was appoint-  
s following year  
Winchester, one  
he was again  
Major General,  
—through un-  
nd the insulted  
h State he was  
r of that year  
at Carrollton,

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

299

General S. W. Kearney\* had fought on the Canadian border in the war of 1812, was engaged in New Mexico and California in 1846, and served with honor in several severe conflicts of this war. At the bombardment of Vera Cruz, Commodore David Connor, descended from an Irish family which settled in Pennsylvania about the middle of the last century, displayed the highest skill and intrepidity. The war was finally brought to an end by the treaty of peace signed by the envoys of the two contending powers at Guadalupe Hidalgo, on February 2, 1848.

\* Major General Stephen W. Kearney was the grandson, of Philip Kearney, whose father came from Ireland and settled in Monmouth county, New Jersey, in 1716. Stephen W. Kearney was born at Newark in 1794. While only in his eighteenth year he received, on the breaking out of the war of 1812, a First Lieutenant's commission in the 13th U. S. Infantry, and took part in the engagements on the Canadian frontier. At the battle of Queenstown Heights he particularly distinguished himself by heading a successful charge on an English battery, for which Lieut. Col. Christie, his commander, presented the young officer with his own sword upon the field. He was afterwards taken prisoner, sent to Quebec, and long detained in captivity. On the organization of the 1st. U. S. Dragoons in 1833, Kearney was appointed Lieut. Col. of the Regiment, and was made Colonel three years later. In 1846 he was commissioned Brigadier General, was placed in command of the Army of the West, and at its head, conquered New Mexico. He received the brevet of Major-General for his services in the district first named and in California. He was twice wounded in the battle of San Pasena, and commanded in the conflicts of San Gabriel and the Plains of Mesa. He was made Governor of California in 1847, and died at Vera Cruz, Oct. 3, 1848, through illness caused by his exertions in the Mexican war.

[REDACTED]

THE UNION.

ix of Irish  
the unsuc-  
cessary to  
luring the  
esponsible  
and bayo-  
tion grave  
England  
essness of  
of justice,  
Americans  
he became  
don Parli-  
causes of  
Graham,  
saffection  
tion now,  
ltiply the  
ides—not  
y, if you  
ebellious  
y is de-  
England,  
th those  
present

THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

801

the melancholy aspect of a falling nation." His appeal was of course successful, and the motion was promptly rejected.

*The Naval and Military Gazette*, about the same time said. "There are now stationed in Ireland 35,000 men of all arms, but widely scattered over the island. In the event of a rebellion, and who can say we are not on the eve of one? we feel great solicitude for the numerous small detachments of our gallant soldiers. \* \* \* It is time to be up and doing. \* \* \* The day we fear is near when, quite peaceably, every Repealer will come armed to a meeting, to be held simultaneously as to day and hour, all over the island, and then try to cut off, quite peaceably, every detachment of her Majesty's loyal army." *The Westminster Review* asked: "Is it absolutely certain that we can beat this people?" and one of its contributors remarked: "If something is not done, a fleet of steamboats from the United States will, some fine morning, be the Euthanasia of the Irish struggle."

There was in fact some reason to apprehend that America would aid her sister nation in a struggle against British despotism, if one should break out. The President of the United States, John Tyler, was a "Friend of Ireland." His son Robert Tyler presided over a Repeal convention held in New York City in September, 1843, at which there appeared delegates from thirteen states and one territory, and which occupied three days in deliberating upon the best methods of assisting the cause of Irish liberty. Money was being liberally subscribed here in aid of the movement. Boston alone, in the first six months of 1844, sent \$10,000 to Ireland, and other cities were not far behind. A dispute arose between the United States and Britain, a little later, over the Oregon boundary, and President Polk, himself an Irish-American who had succeeded President Tyler in



[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

h, 1845, declared that the right of the United States to territory of Oregon, up to a certain parallel of latitude, clear and unquestionable." Sir Robert Peel became nervous and sent what he called a "message of peace" and, an additional grant to Maynooth College. He aided in securing the assent of the London Parliament measure, by saying that there was rising "in the far horizon a cloud (the Oregon boundary question), indeed but threatening future storms."

The year following (1846), however, a failure of the potato in Ireland to some extent relieved the apprehensions of the British Ministers. Over 300,000 people perished of hunger, or of typhus fever caused by hunger, in the months of that year. It is hardly necessary to say that the Irish lived under a native government, a government, in fact under any government except whose rule they were cursed, this partial failure of the potato would not have led to the death of a human being during every one of the "famine" years, more food exported from Ireland to England, than would have supported the population of the former country. But the great majority of whom lived in England, had to pay their rents, and the taxes imposed by the London government had to be paid, even if hundreds of thousands should perish of hunger, while the last sight that dying eyes was that of English soldiers and officers upon and putting on board ships bound for Ireland the crops which they toiled so hard to raise.

The year '47 witnessed still more appalling scenes: but it is too horrible to dwell on; suffice it to say here that in three years '46, '47, and '48, the best authorities estimate that over a million and a half of human beings died of "famine" in the midst of plenty. The number was quite as large as had been predicted in "politi-

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

303

cal circles" in England; there it was complacently estimated that there would be at least "two millions of Irish corpses" as a result of British law, produced starvation before the close of the last mentioned year.

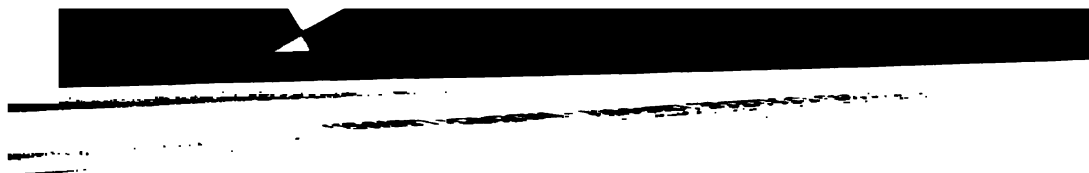
The London Parliament indeed voted some small sums of money for the relief of this terrible distress, but it at the same time compelled the people to give up the food which they had raised at the point of the bayonet, in order that it might be sold in England to supply the British treasury with funds and the landlords with their rents.

Meanwhile British Ministers pretended to sympathize with their victims in Ireland, and appealed on their behalf for alms to the world. The Irish insisted that they wanted no alms, only the right to take care of themselves. At a public meeting in Dublin, presided over by the Lord Mayor, a resolution was passed declaring "That for purposes of temporary relief as well as permanent improvement, the one great want and demand of Ireland was that foreign legislators and Ministers should no longer interfere in the management of her affairs."

Assistance was sent to Ireland from all quarters, but in many cases it was prevented from reaching the people. The Sultan of Turkey sent \$10,000, but half the sum was returned to him, not for the reason that it was not needed, but because the English Queen, who derived so large a proportion of her income from Ireland, could not spare to help her alleged "subjects" more than half the Sultan's contribution, and would not allow him to give more than herself.

Munificent contributions were sent from America. A committee in Philadelphia raised in a short time \$48,000 in cash, and in provisions, to the value of \$20,000. New York contributed nearly a quarter of a million of dollars, and Boston and the New England States about the same amount.\* At

\* The aid sent from America during this terrible famine was a generous



Washington a meeting in aid of the suffering Irish people was held at which the Vice-President of the United States, George M. Dallas, took the chair, and our government sent two ships of war to New York and Boston to convey provisions to Ireland. But when those vessels reached the Irish ports, they found British ships sailing out loaded with food from the very districts in which the "famine" was greatest.

No wonder that Lester says \* "this was not a famine, which means in the proper sense of the term a calamity sent by the Almighty upon the fruits of the earth. It was all *legal assassination—foulest of all murder*. Would not a Coroner's jury of Americans, sitting at an inquest over such dead, *be compelled by their oaths as honest men to render a verdict of wilful murder against the Queen of England?*" Nor need we be surprised at Mitchel's assertion that "All the nations of the earth might be defied to feed or relieve Ireland, beset by such a government as this (of Britain)." †

At a meeting of the Irish confederation, held to thank the people of the United States for their generosity, Mitchel said:

"Americans give us the produce of their own industry and energy. We have no claim upon them;—America never wronged us, never robbed us;—no American ever sought, save by fair competition, to ruin our trade that his might flourish;—America has not the spending of our rents and revenues;—Americans do not thrive by virtue of our beggary, and live by our death;—Americans do not impose upon us laws that breed famine and pestilence, nor locust

return "after many years" for the relief which the Irish had forwarded to the starving people of Massachusetts in 1676. Then a ship from Dublin brought to Boston a full cargo of provisions valued at about £1,000 sterling, which was divided among one hundred and sixteen suffering families of that city.

\* *Glory and Shame of England.*

† *Last Conquest of Ireland (perhaps).*

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

swarms of officials that exasperate famine and In your thanks to the Americans let your who with them. Let your acknowledgments be as unconditional as their generosity (hear, and lo They have laid us under an obligation; and it good to us it shall be discharged (loud cheers) lishmen can well afford to give Ireland alm spoils of Ireland. They are rich and may well because we have been such fools as to let th bread to eat and our money to spend for gene cause we have consented to use everything th and to make little or nothing for ourselves; have sacrificed our tradesmen's wages and lives to the insatiable spirit of English—com call it; beggars must keep a civil tongue in the it not be supposed that I mean to derogate from or to limit our thanks, when I tell them that, know it or not, they are living upon Irish *although the loss of one crop be a visitation from ish famine is a visitation from England*—that t we want relief, and they can give it, is just that has been carried away, and that they have it."

In 1841 there were, according to the ce 8,175,125 people in Ireland, and the census estimated that the population in 1851 wou 9,018,799. But when the census was taken year, it had fallen to 6,550,000, a loss of near and a half. 1,188,000 had emigrated from inclusive, over three quarters of a million of this country, leaving not far from a million be accounted for. They were in famine and graves. And the London *Times* cried out ex Celts are gone, gone with a vengeance; *the Lo*

On March 4, 1857, James Buchanan, born c at Stony Batter, Franklin county, Pa., too office as President of the United States, he h 174 electoral votes, to 114 cast for John C.

[REDACTED]

ation Minne-  
o the Union,

Presidency in  
n the people  
in the latter  
f State Sov-  
raw from the  
to fear that  
succeeded in  
form a sepa-  
ter was fired  
se days after  
seventy-five  
summoning  
ded here to  
e Civil War,  
it, and the  
template the  
the subject.  
f the heroism  
om East and  
inviolable the  
Shields and  
n and Mulli-  
re and many  
under them,  
bravery, and  
lellan on the  
Appomattox,  
d South, the  
intained the  
r race had

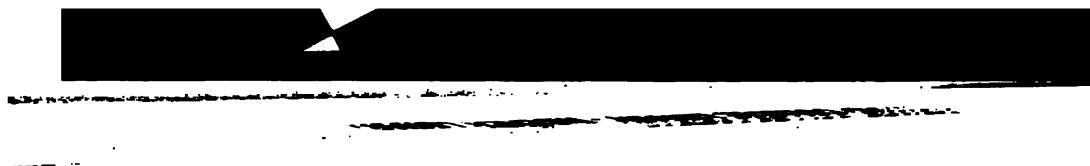
### THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

307

won, from "Dunkirk to Belgrade," among the best swordsmen of Europe.

And if the Starry Flag needed defenders to-morrow, the Irish-American Chief of the army of the United States, Phil. H. Sheridan, active, skillful and daring as he is modest, would find himself at the head of regiments of citizen-soldiers of his own blood, as prompt to respond to the call of duty, and as brave and faithful in its performance as any he has commanded. The Sixty-ninth of New York, the banner Irish-American regiment of the Republic, under its veteran Colonel James Cavanagh, is second to none in the Republic as a military organization. The Ninth Massachusetts well maintains the reputation won by it during the Civil War, and the Hibernian Rifles of Illinois, the Third regiment California National Guards, and scores of companies throughout the Union, continue to show that the old spirit of the race is still as vigorous as ever, and its devotion as much to be relied on.

At the Presidential election of 1880 Jas. A. Garfield was chosen President of the United States; Chester A. Arthur, son of Rev. W. Arthur, of Ballymena, Antrim Co., Ireland, being elected Vice President. They took the oath of office on March 4, 1881. On July 2 of that year President Garfield received a fatal wound at the hands of an assassin and died on Sept. 19, following, being succeeded as President by General Arthur. The latter was born at Fairfield, Vermont, in 1830, and died at New York, Nov. 18, 1886.



## CHAPTER XXI.

STRENGTH OF THE IRISH ELEMENT IN THE UNITED STATES,  
CANADA AND SOUTH AMERICA.

THE numerical strength of the Irish race in America has been variously estimated, but the conclusions arrived at with regard to this question by Patrick Ford, appear upon investigation to be the most accurate and reliable. He has bestowed great attention on the subject, and examined closely all available sources of information. Mr. Ford says,\* (writing in 1874): "The plan to be followed out in order to reach a correct conclusion in the matter is: (1.) Find the total population of the thirteen colonies at the close of the War of Independence. (2.) Divide that population into its constituent elements—English, Irish, French, German, etc. (3.) Find out the natural product of that colonial population to-day supposing, of course, no European immigration had set in or affected it. (4.) Find the produce of the population of the States and Territories once held by France and Spain; as well as (5) the number of French-Canadians, and Irish-Canadians who are now settled in this country, but who were never registered on the "emigration" lists, and who, of course, cannot be counted in the product of colonial population. (6.) Next find the figures of the total European immigration to the United States since 1790. (7.) Divide that immigration into nationalities. (8.) What nationality has contributed longest and largest in the

\* *Irish World*, July 25, 1874.

way of immigration? (9.) In what ratio does population increase? (10.) What is the product of Irish immigration from 1790, in the United States to-day? (11.) What is the product of all the nationalities. This is the plan adopted. After much labor and patient research arrived at the following result:

*"Table showing the relative proportions of the constituents of the population of the U. S. in 1870"*

1. Total white population of the thirteen Colonies at the close of the Revolutionary War
2. Relative proportions of the constituent elements in the Colonial population:
 

Celtic (Irish, Scotch, Welsh, French, etc.)	
(Irish separately)	
English, (so-called Anglo-Saxon)	
Dutch and Scandinavians	
- 3.—Product, in 1870, of the population of 1790.
- 4.—Product, in 1870, of the separate elements of the population of 1790:
 

Celtic	
(Irish separately)	
English	
Germans, Dutch and Scandinavians	
- 5.—Product, in 1870, of population gained by acquisition of new territory since 1790
- 6.—Product, in 1870, of Irish and French immigration from Canada
- 7.—Total strength of Colored element in 1870
- 8.—Total immigration to U. S. from 1790 to 1870
 

Irish Immigration from 1790 to 1870	
English immigration, from 1790 to 1870	
Immigration of all other elements	



[REDACTED]

- 9.—Product of total immigration to U. S., from  
 1790 to 1870 . . . . . 23,000,000  
 Product of Irish immigration (from 1790) 9,750,000  
 Product of English " (from 1790) 2,000,000  
 Product of all other " (from 1790) 11,250,000
- 10.—Total population of United States in 1870 38,500,000
- 11.—Joint product, in 1870,  
 of Irish Colonial  
 element and subse-  
 quent Irish immigra-  
 tion (including that  
 from Canada) . . 14,325,000  
 Joint Product, in  
 1870 of English Col-  
 onial element and  
 subsequent English  
 immigration . . 4,522,000  
 Joint Product, in  
 1870, of all other Col-  
 onial elements and  
 all subsequent immi-  
 gration (including  
 colored population) 19,653,000
- Total Joint Product.
- 38,500,000
- 12.—Total Celtic element (Irish, Scotch, French,  
 Spanish, Italian), in United States in 1870 24,000,000  
 Total Irish element in United States in  
 1870 . . . . . 14,325,000  
 Total English element in United States in  
 1870 . . . . . 4,522,000  
 Total of all other elements (not Celtic nor  
 English) in the United States in 1870 9,978,000

"Of the authorities which we have searched to aid us in forming our calculations, the principal are: Blodget's *Statistical Manual*; Dr. Seybert's *Annals*; *Colonial Lectures*, by Merrivale; *Progress of Western Nations*, by Bury (an English baronet); *Tucker's Tables of Population*; Bromwell's

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

*History of Immigration; Eighty Years' Progress* (production of eminent men); Grahame's *History of America*.

"The ratio of increase of the American population down by the most approved writers, and as *Appleton's Cyclopædia*, is (leaving out immigration) cent. annually. That is every hundred persons in population have increased 1.38 yearly in excess of deaths; ing this standard, we find that the colonial population 1790 would, by natural increase, have reached even from that up the following figures:

"Table 2.—Showing what the population of 1790 would have been at each succeeding tenth year—without immigration.

Year.	By natural increase.
1790 . . . . .	3,172,000
1800 . . . . .	3,638,000
1810 . . . . .	4,173,000
1820 . . . . .	4,786,000
1830 . . . . .	5,489,000
1840 . . . . .	6,395,000
1850 . . . . .	7,220,000
1860 . . . . .	8,280,000
1870 . . . . .	9,497,000

"According to this estimate—which is presumably—had there been no immigration permitted since population of the United States, at the close of 1870, have been a little short of nine and one-half million; a number probably does more than represent the product of that Colonial population to-day: while all of the white inhabitants of the Union have been accounted for by immigration and by cession of Territory, since the which that first census was taken. Conceding that



ural increase of the population of 1790 amounts in 1870 to something over nine millions, we have now to determine how that number is distributed among the elements, according to origin. If the elements increased at a uniform rate, it would be easy to make this distribution. If the Anglo-Saxon race increased as fast as the Celtic, then we would have only to give each a share, in the population of 1870, proportionate to the share it had in 1790. But such is not at all the case; and for this reason, that the elements do *not* increase at a uniform rate. The Irish race is the most prolific of any in the world. All statisticians admit the fact; and ethnologists pronounce the rapid increase of the Irish people a phenomenon. \* \* \* But lest any exception should be made to this conclusion, we shall apportion the figures as if all the elements had increased at a uniform rate:

"Table 3.—Showing the natural product, in 1870, of each separate element of the population of 1790.

	Element in	
	1790	1870
Celtic (Irish, Scotch, French, and Welsh) . . . . .	1,908,200	5,697,000
Irish separately . . . . .	1,141,920	3,418,000
English or so-called Anglo-Saxon . . . . .	841,800	2,504,000
Dutch and Scandinavians . . . . .	427,000	1,295,000
Total. . . . .	3,172,000	9,496,000

"Thus we see that the white population of 1790, if left in undisturbed possession of its Thirteen Colonies, would to-day amount to something less than one-fourth of the actual population of the United States! The other three-fourths—excepting the colored race—are composed of immigrants and their descendants. This general conclusion is not dependent on our assertion. It is definitely and specifically

*dia.* The total English

so-called Anglo-Saxon element in this country about five millions—or less than an eighth of the population. This figure will surprise some. But surprise those most who have given the subject least thought. To those who say the English element must be greater, simply put the question: Why must it? How are we to make it greater? Oh! but it is commonly supposed that this is an English country. We are aware of the fact. But there are several popular errors abroad, and one of them. \* \* \* Let those who say the English element in the United States must be greater than the Irish, produce their proofs. Let them exhibit the facts. If they can do this, very well—if they cannot—if they have nothing to show—then let them not trouble others believing that which they themselves are unable to substantiate. Ignorance is often excusable; but when it becomes dictatorial, only merits contempt. Truth must always yield to facts."

Mr. Ford brings forward an overwhelming array of facts and statistics in support of his conclusion, which is acknowledged as correct by all who take the trouble to investigate the question. Since 1870, not far from half a million more of Irish immigrants have arrived in the United States, and although emigration from Ireland to this country has fallen off considerably from what it was many years ago, and is now exceeded by that from Germany, it is still true, looking at our vast population, that the proportion of the various elements cannot be appreciably altered. It may be asserted then, with confidence, that as the total population of the United States has risen from 38,500,000 to almost sixty millions to-day, the Irish element, increasing at least in equal proportion, now numbers not less than twenty-three millions.

In this brief sketch of the Irish race in America



unavoidable that many subjects of great interest and importance should have been passed over. The Irish pioneers in the Western States, their adventures, progress, the settlements which they founded, and the great communities which have sprung from them, the genius and skill of Fulton, Colles and O'Reilly, and many others; the contributions to science and learning of Adrain, Allison, Thomson and other eminent Irish American scholars; the wisdom and practical knowledge of social questions displayed by men like Matthew Carey, his son Henry C. Carey, and his grandson Henry Carey Baird; the generosity of Margaret Haughey, Bryon Mullanphy and those of our own day—all these and many other subjects of great interest cannot be touched on in these pages.

In Canada there are over a million of the Irish race, for the most part still true to their old traditions and principles, and though living under the flag of Britain, soon it is hoped to be flung away, yet one in sentiment and feeling with their kindred in this Republic. In the capital of Newfoundland, where live so many of the descendants of those who fought on the Hills of Wexford in '98, in the old city by the St. Lawrence, on whose heights Montgomery fell, in the commercial metropolis of the Dominion, Montreal, where the children of the Gael though born upon Canadian soil, glory in the name of "Young Irishmen," in Toronto where, however few, the men of our race were always fearless and faithful, in these cities and in many a town and village on the banks of the St. Lawrence, beside the great lakes of the West, or in the backwoods, are to be found those who have sprung from Ireland, are proud and prompt to avow it, and willing, anxious as their brothers here, to aid her cause and humble her enemy.

In the Southern continent, over a quarter of a million of Irish Argentines, constantly increasing in numbers and re-

## THE IRISH RACE IN AMERICA.

sources, forming national clubs, and helping forward the movement made for Ireland's advancement, give proof the spirit and vigor of the race has not deteriorated in the "Southern Cross."

For ourselves here on this free soil, we yield to none our devotion to the institutions, and in obedience to the will of the Republic. We have no jealousies or prejudices against any element of the community. We hold, however, that to use the phrase which John F. Finnerty has adopted as his motto, "Europe not England is the Mother Country of America," and that pretensions or assumptions to the contrary are absurd and mischievous. If there be among our fellow citizens, who question our right to aid our kindred across the sea in their struggles against that despotism to whose overthrow America owes her freedom, prosperity and progress, we say to them in the words of our adopted son of Washington, "Americans recall to your minds the memory of that heroic time when Irishmen were our friends, and when in all the world we had not a friend beside." This Republic has never suffered, nor will it ever suffer through its friendship for Ireland, and those who have come here from that Old Land may repeat as ever, what John Boyle O'Reilly has said in his own glowing way in the *Exile of the Gael*:

"No treason we bring from Erin—nor bring we shame nor guilt!  
The sword we hold may be broken, but we have not dropped the  
The wreath we bear to Columbia is twisted of thorns, not bays:  
And the songs we sing are saddened by thoughts of desolate days  
But the hearts we bring for Freedom are washed in the surge of  
And we claim our right by a People's fight outliving a thousand  
years!"

"What bring ye else to the Building?"

"O, willing hands to toil:  
Strong natures tuned to harvest-song, and bound to the kindly soil"



Bold pioneers for the wilderness, defenders in the field—  
The sons of a race of soldiers who never learned to yield.  
Young hearts with duty brimming—as faith makes sweet the due :  
Their truth to me their witness they cannot be false to you !”

And every patriotic American will echo the poet's closing words:

“ It is well, ay well, old Erin ! The sons you give to me  
Are symbolled long in flag and song—your Sunburst on the Sea ?  
All mine by the chrism of Freedom, still yours by their love's belief :  
And truest to me shall the tenderest be in a suffering mother's grief.  
Their loss is the change of the wave to the cloud, of the dew to the  
river and main :  
Their hope shall persist through the sea and the mist, and thy streams  
shall be filled again.  
As the smolt of the salmon go down to the sea, and as surely come  
back to the river.  
Their love shall be yours while your sorrow endures, for God guardeth  
His right forever !”

## FORDS' NATIONAL LIBRARY

BE SURE TO GET VOLUME 1, NUMBER 1.

# † The Irish Question.

AS VIEWED BY

ONE HUNDRED EMINENT STATESMEN

OF

ENGLAND, IRELAND AND AMERICA.

WITH A

SKETCH OF IRISH HISTORY

And the Great SPEECHES and LETTERS  
HOME RULE in full of

GLADSTONE,  
PARNE! L.  
DAVITT,

BLAINE,  
HENDRICKS,  
LOGAN,

RANDALL,  
SHERMAN,  
DAWES,

AND MANY OTHERS.

## PRESS NOTICES:

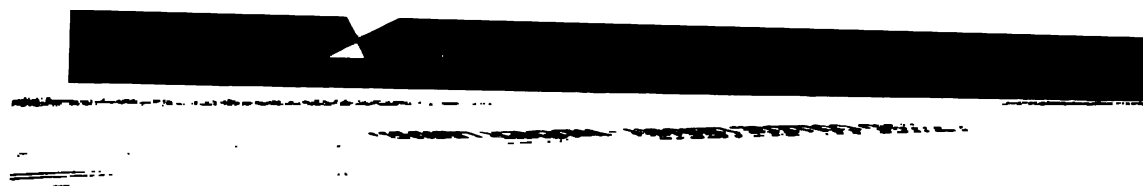
“A true hand-book of the Irish question for to-day.”—*N. Y. A.*

“The best thing on Ireland, and calculated to do the most good  
of any recent publication.”—*N. Y. Sunday Democrat.*

“A splendid reference-book.”—*Brooklyn Catholic Examine*

“For the modest sum of twenty-five cents, in convenient form  
the historical student, through the enterprising Fords, can  
only learn for himself the true story of Ireland, but also for  
the information thus acquired by the masterly logic of over  
hundred eminent public men, who have given their most careful  
attention to the same subject.”—*Brooklyn Daily Standard.*





No. 2.—BOUND IN CLOTH, \$1.00.

FORDS' NATIONAL LIBRARY.

—No. 2.—

## MICHAEL DAVITT'S

NEW BOOK,

### "LEAVES FROM A PRISON DIARY."

- 1.—Convict Life in English Dungeons.
- 2.—The Land and Labor Question.
- 3.—Home Rule for Ireland.

A book that will live forever among the interesting productions of Irish genius—entertaining, instructing and suggestive.

"The most interesting work since John Mitchell's 'Jail Journal.'"  
—*The American Celt*.

A BOOK OF OVER 300 PAGES.

Price, - - - Twenty-five Cents.

FOR SALE BY ALL NEWSDEALERS,

Or send price in postage stamps to

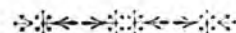
FORDS' NATIONAL LIBRARY,

17 Barclay Street, New York.

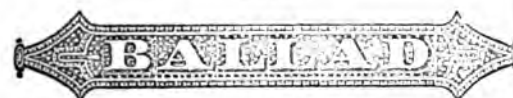
No. 3.—HANDSOMELY BOUND IN GREEN CLOTH

FORDS' NATIONAL LIBRARY

—No. 3.—



THE



## POETRY OF IRELAND

Containing Three Hundred Beautiful Poems  
and Recitations.

—BY—

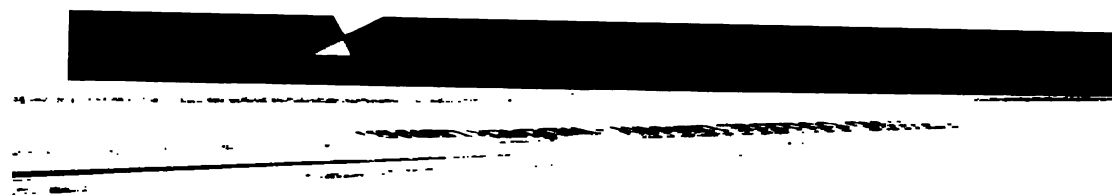
J. C. Mangan,	Thomas Davis,	Lady Dufferin
Oliver Goldsmith,	John Banim,	J. Keegan,
Gerald Griffin,	J. J. Callanan,	R. D. Williams,
Samuel Ferguson,	Edward Walsh,	Mrs. W. R. V.
M. Halpin,	Dr. Brennan,	Rev. C. Webb,
Samuel Lover,	M. J. Barry,	John F. Wall,
Dr. Wm. Magin,	B. Dowling,	D. F. McCart,
G. A. Reynolds,	Dr. R. R. Madden,	Thomas Parr,
James Orr,	Wm. McComb,	M. W. Balfe,
Father Prout,	Rob't Dwyer Joyce,	Ellen Forrest,
Charles Lever,	John K. Casey,	John Savage,
Mrs. K. J. O'Doherty,	Dion Boucicault,	John Fraser,
Mrs. Mary A. Ford,	Chas. Cavan Duffy,	T. W. McGee,
Tom Hood,	Thomas Moore,	Byron.

Price, 25 Cents. For Sale by all Newsdealers

Send price in postage stamps to

FORDS' NATIONAL LIBRARY

17 Barclay Street,



No. 4.—BOUND IN GREEN CLOTH, \$1.00.

## FORDS' NATIONAL LIBRARY

—No. 4—

# HOURS WITH EMINENT IRISHMEN,

AND

## A Glimpse of Irish History.

By JUSTIN H. McCARTHY.

This comprises two separate volumes in one book. The first gives full descriptions of the lives and characters of the following noted men and events:

Lord Edward Fitzgerald  
James Clarence Mangan,  
Richard Brinsley Sheridan  
Thomas Francis Meagher,  
Jonathan Swift,  
Myles Byrne,  
George Berkeley,  
Gerald Griffin,  
Patrick Sarsfield,  
Brian Boróimhe,  
The Earls,

Oliver Goldsmith,  
Henry Grattan,  
Henry Flood,  
Edmund Burke,  
Richard Steele,  
Laurence Sterne,  
Thomas Davis,  
Charles Lever,  
John Mitchel,  
The Eighth of April,  
The Thirty Tyrants.

### PART SECOND.

## A GLIMPSE OF IRISH HISTORY.

The Legends,	The Eighteenth Century,
Christianity,	Emmet—O'Connell,
The Norman Conquest,	Young Ireland—Fenianism
Elizabeth,	The Land Question,
Cromwellian Settlement,	Home Rule,
Restoration—William III.	The Land League.

TWO BOOKS IN ONE.      PRICE, 25 CENTS

FOR SALE BY ALL NEWSDEALERS.

[REDACTED]

LOOK OUT

FOR

No. 8.

OF

Fords' National Library

---

DENNIS O'SULLIVAN'S

THRILLING STORY,

THE

SWORN BROTHERS.



THE  
GREAT HISTORICAL PICTURE  
OF  
**The Irish Brigade at Fontenoy**

IN COLORS,

SIZE, 23 x 34 INCHES.

JUST ISSUED. PRICE, \$1.00 PER COPY.

This picture is an exact copy of the great French painting, giving a description of the famous Irish charge that saved the day at Fontenoy for the French against the English.

It should be in every Irish Home,

The scene depicts King Louis and his staff, watching with anxiety and delight the headlong charge of the Irish brigade that turned defeat into victory, and saved the armies of France from another Waterloo. The green flag of Ireland waves triumphantly over the red cross of St. George, while the English columns, smashed and decimated, are fleeing in wild disorder before the Irish cry—"Remember Limerick!"

Address

**A. E. & R. E. FORD,**

*17 Barclay Street, New York.*

Send money in Postage Stamps, Express Orders,  
or Registered Letter.

~~2266 016~~

aw







[REDACTED]



Widener Library



3 2044 084 549 005